



Copyright © 1973 by the Estate of I. A. Horowitz  
All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced  
or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or  
mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any in-  
formation storage and retrieval system, without permission  
in writing from the Publisher.

The Macmillan Company  
866 Third Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10022  
Collier-Macmillan Canada Ltd., Toronto, Ontario  
Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 72-80175

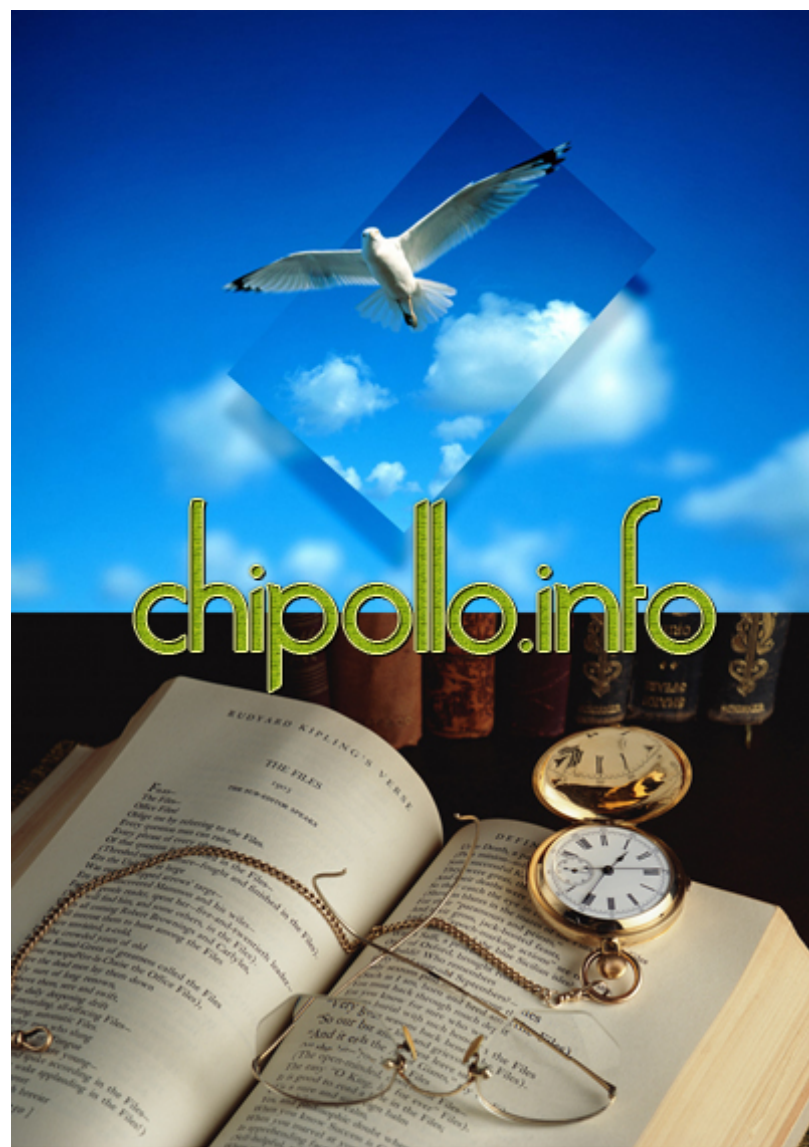
FIRST PRINTING

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

740368

## Contents

1	IN THE BEGINNING . . .	1
2	WILLIAM STEINITZ	17
3	EMANUEL LASKER	48
4	JOSÉ RAOUL CAPABLANCA	71
5	ALEXANDER ALEKHINE	94
6	THE WORLD CHAMPIONSHIP TOURNAMENT OF 1948	117
7	THE REIGN OF BOTVINNIK	144
8	TAL AND PETROSIAN	177
9	BORIS SPASSKY AND THE ADVENT OF BOBBY FISCHER	219
10	THE SPASSKY-FISCHER MATCH	256
	<i>Index</i>	285



# I

## In the Beginning . . .

ON the afternoon of January 11, 1886, William Steinitz and Johannes Hermann Zukertort sat down opposite each other in a small room at 80 Fifth Avenue in New York City to play the first game of their long-awaited chess match; at stake was \$2000 a side and the championship of the world. The sum of \$4000 was at stake because the night before each player had handed to the Honorable Charles F. Buck of New Orleans, Louisiana, his half of that sum; the world championship was at stake because both players said so. It was fairly certain that at the end the loser would recognize the winner's claim to the title—whether the rest of the world would follow suit was a matter of conjecture.

From the middle of the sixteenth century onward there have come down to us the names of chessplayers who have some claim to be called the best of their time. The earliest of these is a Spanish clergyman, Ruy Lopez, after whom one of the most popular modern openings is named. Already generally recognized as the strongest player in his native country, he traveled to Rome about 1560 and there met—with what result we do not know—the leading Italian players of the day. Italy was at that time the center of the chess world; there is good evidence that the rules still in effect today were introduced there, and the Portuguese expert Damiano had written in Italian a popular manual on the game. When Lopez returned to Spain he wrote a manual of his own—the *Libro de la invencion liberal y arte del juego del 'Axedrez*—in

which he proffered the sound advice that it is often advantageous to place the board so that the sun shines in one's opponent's eyes. But some years later, one Giovanni Leonardo di Bona of Calabria, whom Lopez had met and defeated in Rome, presumably brought sunshades to the return match, and beat both the good ecclesiast and his nearest rival, Alfonso Ceron of Granada, in a meeting at the court of Philip II.

The most famous player of the seventeenth century is the Calabrese Giacchino Greco (1600?-1634?). We have no record of Greco's results against other experts of his day; his fame rests on some pretty, if unsound, combinations recorded in a manuscript of about 1625, and whether they arose in play over the board or are merely analyses is uncertain.

About François André Danican Philidor, the most renowned player of the eighteenth century, we know much more. Born in 1726, he combined a successful career as a musician with an even more illustrious life as a chessplayer: at the age of twenty-two he produced his best-known book, *L'Analyse des échecs*, and from about that time until he died in 1795 was widely recognized as the best player in the world. It is important to note, however, that he himself never claimed the world championship, nor did anyone else trouble to suggest that he might merit such a title.

Philidor's familiar dictum "The pawn is the soul of chess" is a good guide to his theory of the game: he advocated a slow and cautious development of the forces with particular attention to the pawn structure, and the games attributed to him show that his ideas led in practice to elaborate, and often tedious, positional maneuvering. In his writing and in his play he was in part applying a necessary corrective to the notions of the Italian school, whose praxis consisted mostly of play with the pieces, aimed in direct attack against the enemy king. Despite his successes, Philidor's theories exerted little immediate influence; after his death the best-known players played carefree combinative chess in a style directly descended from the Italians.

In the early nineteenth century Paris remained the center of the chess world, thanks largely to the talents of A. Lebreton Deschappelles and his no less gifted pupil L. C. Mahé de La Bourdonnais, who contested an interminable match against the Irishman Alex-

ander M'Donnell that consisted mostly of wild gambits. But Deschappelles eventually retired from chess to devote himself to whist—he is the inventor of the Deschappelles coup, characteristically a sacrificial conception—and when La Bourdonnais died in 1840 the balance of power shifted to England.

The leading English player of the nineteenth century was Howard Staunton (1810-1874), reputedly the bastard son of Frederick Howard, fifth earl of Carlisle. The more one learns about Staunton, the less one likes him. He began with a career in the theater, where he apparently acquired histrionic talents that stood him in good stead for the rest of his life, but he soon turned his attention to criticism, and became recognized as an authority on Shakespeare. Turning to chess at the relatively late age of thirty, he quickly became the leading player in London, and when in 1843 he defeated the Frenchman Saint-Amant in a match, could claim with some reason that he was then the best player in the world. His real forte, however, was journalism, because only in that field could he exercise to the full the genius for self-aggrandizement and bombast for which he is today chiefly remembered. In 1841 he founded the *Chess Player's Chronicle*; in its pages, and after 1844 in his column in the *Illustrated London News*, he sought with fair success to mold the opinions of the entire chess world. In this role he treated Paul Morphy with some shabbiness, as we shall soon see.

About Staunton as a player it is perhaps impossible to be strictly objective: it is just too incredible that anyone seemingly so weak as he could have achieved such success and exerted such influence for so long. When the book of the tournament at London in 1851 came into the hands of the then fifteen-year-old Morphy, the lad felt moved to scribble on the title page, under the legend declaring it to be "By H. Staunton, Esq., author of the 'Handbook of Chess,' 'Chess-player's Companion,' etc." the irreverent parenthesis "(and some devilish bad games)." Devilish bad they certainly are, and share with their author's prose style a turgidity that is truly exasperating. The real secret of Staunton's success was that he picked his opponents carefully—how carefully will soon become apparent. Only once in his life did he fail to be careful enough.

In 1851 Staunton organized in London the first international



• tournament in chess history—presumably so he could win it—and invited among others an obscure German schoolteacher named Adolf Anderssen. Anderssen, at the time of the London tournament, was thirty-three years old, and a professor of mathematics at the Friedrich Gymnasium in Breslau. His reputation was already firmly established in his native country, but he was invited to London primarily on the strength of a drawn match he had played against his compatriot Daniel Harrwitz. It is safe, and in a way entertaining, to suspect that not many in England, least of all Staunton, considered him a likely candidate for the first prize.

The tournament was organized really as a series of matches. In the first round, victory depended on two wins, draws not counting—one could afford to do this since draws were then infrequent (the figure for the whole tournament was seven out of eighty-five). In the second and subsequent rounds, four wins were needed. After the play of the first match-round had eliminated eight of the original sixteen participants, the remaining eight played a kind of Swiss system event (winners were paired against winners and losers against losers) for the eight prizes. Anderssen defeated successively Kieseritzky by  $+2-0=1$ , Szen by  $+4-2=0$ , Staunton by  $+4-1=0$ , and in the final round the Englishman Marmeduke Wyvill by  $+4-2=1$ .

While it was generally conceded that Staunton had played in the tournament under a considerable handicap because of his administrative responsibilities, it is not at all obvious from his games that he was playing any worse than usual. Nevertheless, he forthwith issued a challenge to Anderssen, who, although disposed to accept, needed to return home to take up his teaching duties. The two reached a vague agreement that they would play a match, probably in Germany, sometime in the future. In 1843 a challenge was issued, on Staunton's behalf, to any player in the world to contest a 21-game match for £150 a side; Staunton made it plain that it was directed principally to Anderssen. When no one took it up, Staunton retired from active play but not, unfortunately, from journalism.

In consequence of his victory in the London tournament of 1851, Anderssen is regarded by some chess historians as the first world champion, although he himself never claimed the title. In contrast

to Staunton—who never officially claimed the title either—he appears to have been a modest and unassuming man whose gentle nature was belied by his extremely aggressive and combinative style. Of that style, as exemplary of the style of the nineteenth century in general, former world champion Dr. Max Euwe has written:

Material, and pawns in particular, counted for little. Gambits were played by choice and other openings were treated in similar style. Everything turned on attack and counterattack. Passive play, defense, refusal of sacrifices, the giving of one's attention to such "miserable" objectives as the setting-up of a pawn phalanx—these and all such ideas were right outside the mentality of the chessplayer of the first half of the 19th century. He was spellbound by the beauty of combination, and in this realm indeed many an elegant production was the result. The most brilliant protagonist of this style was Adolf Anderssen . . . [Max Euwe, *The Development of Chess Style*]

Anderssen's best-known games, the so-called "Immortal" game, played against Kieseritzky in 1851 (not in the London tournament), and the equally celebrated "Evergreen" against J. Dufrense, played in Berlin in 1852, support Dr. Euwe's picture of Anderssen as an inspired barbarian; his best games from more serious competition for the most part do not. Although Anderssen's games provide examples of positional errors that look primitive by today's standards, he was by no means ignorant of strategical considerations, and could play quietly when the occasion demanded.

The first international tournament in 1851 is often thought to mark the beginning of the modern age in chess. Such classifications are always arbitrary, and it is perhaps equally plausible to cite another date: June 22, 1837, the day Paul Morphy was born. That the birth of a man should mark the beginning of an era is a measure of the man's stature, and, although Morphy's whole chess career spanned only a single decade and his most important activity only about two years, it is scarcely an exaggeration to say that without him chess as we know it would be unthinkable.

Paul Charles Morphy was the son of Judge Alonzo Morphy of the High Court of Louisiana. The Morphys were a family of

mingled Spanish, French, and probably Irish ancestry, and occupied a prominent place in the social world of antebellum New Orleans, a cosmopolitan center that offered advantages in certain branches of culture—chess, for example—not inferior to those of any city in America. Morphy's early life is hardly to be distinguished from that of any other boy of his class—he attended private schools, mastered the social graces, and so on—save in one respect: at the age of twelve or thereabouts he was certainly the strongest chess-player in the city, and probably in the country as well. Paul learned the moves of the game from his father when he was ten years old and was quickly initiated into the chess life of the family: his father, his uncle Ernest, and his maternal grandfather were all avid players. Shortly thereafter, his elders introduced him into New Orleans chess circles; although he required a couple of books on his chair to bring him up to the height of the table, he was soon defeating the best players in the city.

In 1850 the Hungarian expert Johann Jakob Löwenthal, then forty years old, paid a visit to New Orleans and played two games against the youngster, Morphy winning one and drawing the other. Löwenthal, who many years later published a book of Morphy's games, writes of the occasion that although he himself was at the time playing well below his best form, "yet the achievement of the young Paul argues a degree of skill to which it is wonderful that a child could have attained." [Quoted in E. G. Sergeant's, *Morphy's Games of Chess*.]

In December 1850, Paul entered the Jesuit-run St. Joseph's College at Spring Hill, near Mobile, Alabama. After graduating in 1854 he spent another year there, studying mostly mathematics and law (he was then seventeen), and then went on to the University of Louisiana to take up the study of law in earnest. While he was at the university, his father died. In 1857, at the age of twenty, he was admitted to the Louisiana bar; one of his attainments, or so it is reported, was his ability to recite nearly the whole Civil Code of the state from memory.

After he had succeeded in his bar examinations, young Morphy decided that he owed himself a holiday. An excellent opportunity soon presented itself: the New York Chess Club had decided to hold the First American Chess Congress, to which were invited all

the leading players in the country. Morphy of course won easily, winning fourteen games, losing one, and drawing three in tournament play, besides playing, and mostly winning, a prodigious number of "serious" offhand and exhibition games, some at odds, some blindfold. Morphy lingered in New York for several months after the Congress had ended, offered odds of pawn-and-move to any member of the New York Chess Club (he played a short match with C. H. Stanley at those odds, winning four and losing one), and then, in December, returned home to New Orleans. Shortly after his arrival, he extended his offer of pawn-and-move to any American player, but found no takers.

The more serious of present-day players doubtless think it astonishing that Morphy's proposal inspired no acrimony among the people to whom he made it; nowadays the offer of odds is considered a serious breach of etiquette, even on occasions when the offer is more or less justified. But, in an age when people still fought duels to avenge insults real or fancied, Morphy's assertion of supremacy provoked no antagonism. The other American players, it appears, were simply so delighted to see a player of Morphy's caliber spring up among them, and so enthralled with his genius, that he inspired nothing but pride—in one instance, at least, not unmingled with national chauvinism. Shortly after his victory in the American Congress, the American Chess Association contemplated a challenge on his behalf to the best of the Old World. In his *Illustrated London News* column of December 26, 1857, Howard Staunton reported the rumor that such a challenge would shortly be forthcoming, and that it would be proposed that any player in Europe might come over to New York and take on the American champion for stakes of from \$2000 to \$5000 a side. Staunton took it on himself to decline, not only on his own behalf, but on behalf of European chess in general:

No doubt a European champion could be found who would play the match in London or Paris, but the best players in Europe are not chess professionals but have other and more serious occupations, the interests of which forbid such an expenditure of time as is required for a voyage to the United States and back again.

Not an altogether unreasonable attitude, of course, but the implication, however oblique, that Morphy was just the kind of fellow who had nothing to do with his time but play chess was doubtless designed to rankle.

The New Orleans Chess Club, all undaunted, decided to pursue the matter further: in February 1858 they sent a letter to Staunton, inviting him to come to New Orleans and play a match with Morphy for a stake of \$5000, \$1000 of which was to go to Staunton even if he lost. Staunton declined on the grounds of his work and the difficulties of the journey—formidable enough, in those days—but at the same time wrote in his *Illustrated London News* column:

If Mr. Morphy—for whose skill we entertain the liveliest admiration—be desirous to win his spurs among the chess chivalry of Europe, he must take advantage of his proposed visit next year; he will then meet in this country, in France, in Germany, and in Russia, many champions whose names must be as household words to him, ready to test and do honor to his prowess.

Whether or not Staunton intended this rather patronizing sentence to imply that he himself would be willing to play Morphy when the young American arrived in England is debatable; certainly Morphy himself understood it to mean that he need only come over to the Englishman's home ground for the by now eagerly awaited match to become reality. Accordingly, Morphy went to New York and on June 9, 1858, embarked on the steamship *Arabia* for Liverpool.

Morphy arrived in Liverpool on June 21, the day before his twenty-first birthday. It was on his birthday that he arrived in London, and almost immediately began to make the rounds of the city's chess centers: the Divan in the Strand, the St. George's Club in King Street, and later the Philidorian Chess Rooms, Rathbone Place, and the London Chess Club in Cornhill. It was at the St. George's that he first met Staunton. According to Morphy's traveling companion and later biographer Frederick Edge—a reporter on the *Herald* who had met Morphy in New York—Morphy

departed from his usual habit, born, no doubt, of simple shyness, of waiting to be asked to play, and proposed to Staunton that they have an off-hand game. Staunton excused himself on the grounds of a subsequent engagement, as Oscar Wilde might have said, and steadfastly continued to decline, so that, apart from two consultation games, both won by Morphy and his partner, the two never met in actual play.

Morphy spent the better part of the summer meeting other London players in casual games and contesting two matches, one against Löwenthal, whom he had met in New Orleans some nine years before (Morphy won 9 to 3, with 2 draws) and against the Reverend John Owen at pawn-and-move (Morphy won 5 to 0, with 2 draws). The details of his protracted negotiations for a match against Staunton are somewhat apart from the subject, especially in view of their ultimate outcome. Suffice it to say that all of Morphy's efforts to corner his quarry were in vain, and the question whether a match between them would ever take place was still open when, early in September, Morphy set off for Paris.

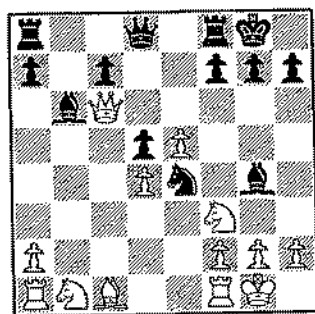
In prospect on the Continent were meetings with players more eager than Staunton to match wits over the board. Specifically, there was promise of a match against Anderssen, but it was also likely that other antagonists would be forthcoming; when, shortly after his arrival, Morphy proceeded to the famed Café de la Régence, chess haunt in former days of Voltaire and Napoleon, and lost an offhand game to Daniel Harrwitz, a match between the two was speedily arranged. Harrwitz won the first two games (Edge writes that Morphy was up very late on the nights before both encounters, taking in the sights of the city) and Morphy the next three, whereupon Harrwitz, pleading indisposition, obtained a ten-day postponement. When play was resumed, Harrwitz lost the sixth game, and forthwith postponed again. Finally, with the score 5 to 2 in Morphy's favor, with 2 draws, Harrwitz abandoned the match. Morphy, characteristically, used the stakes to pay Anderssen's expenses from Breslau to Paris.

Anderssen, however, was detained by his teaching duties, and did not set out for Paris until the middle of December. The interval Morphy occupied in casual games with Paris amateurs (including the Duke of Brunswick and Count Isuard, whom he defeated in a

celebrated game played in an opera box during a performance of *The Barber of Seville*), in exhibitions of blindfold play, and in protracted negotiations by letter with Staunton, who had continued in the meanwhile to deprecate him in the columns of the *Illustrated London News*. Understandably disheartened, Morphy talked of returning home to New Orleans in time for Christmas.

Morphy's broodings were interrupted by Anderssen's arrival in Paris, and play between them began at the Hotel de Breteuil on December 20, 1858, the match to go to the first player to win seven games, draws not counting. Both began under considerable handicaps: Anderssen had met no strong competition for several years, and was thus badly out of practice; Morphy was ill with a fever, and rose from a sickbed to play the first game. Morphy had White, and played the Evans Gambit, but after 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-B4, B-B4; 4 P-QN4, BxP; 5 P-B3, B-R4; 6 P-Q4, PxP; 7 O-O, N-B3? (7 . . . P-Q3!), 8 P-K5? (8 B-R3!), P-Q4; 9 B-QN5, N-K5; 10 PxP, O-O; 11 BxN, PxB; 12 Q-R4,

ANDERSSSEN



MORPHY

B-N3; 13 QxP, B-N5 had a bad game. In this position Morphy played 14 B-N2? (14 B-K3 is necessary, but hardly good: 14 . . . P-B3=) and there followed 14 . . . BxN; 15 PxP, 16 N-N4 with a winning game for Black. Anderssen won after 72 moves.

In the second game Anderssen, White in a Ruy Lopez, got a bad opening, but sacrificed the exchange and secured sufficient counter-

play to reach a draw ending. The older man was thus off to a solid start.

The third game, however, was a catastrophe for Anderssen, and constituted the turning-point of the match. Morphy had White and, no doubt discouraged from trying another Evans by the opening play in the first game, also played a Ruy:

White: Morphy Black: Anderssen 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-B3; 4 P-Q4, QNxP; 5 NxN, PxN; 6 P-K5, P-B3; 7 O-O, PxP; 8 B-N5, B-K2; 9 PxN, BxP; 10 R-K1ch, K-B1; 11 BxB, QxB; 12 P-QB3, P-Q4; 13 PxP, B-K3; 14 N-B3, P-QR3; 15 R-K5, R-Q1; 16 Q-N3, Q-K2; 17 QR-K1, P-N4?; 18 Q-Q1, Q-B3; 19 QR-K3, R-KN1??; 20 RxB, Resigns

Anderssen's play in this game is only partly explicable. The opening variation, believe it or not, had been analyzed and played in Germany—Morphy's 12 P-QB3 is an improvement over Max Lange's 12 N-R3—but the appalling positional blunder 17 . . . P-N4, instead of 17 . . . P-N3, is Anderssen's own, as well as the tactical oversight two moves later.

Anderssen was so disheartened by his feeble play in this game that he lost the next four games in succession. The fourth, with Anderssen playing White, was another Ruy Lopez similar to the second game, in which this time Morphy secured an advantage sufficient to win. Anderssen tried a Center Counter Defense in the fifth game, got a terrible position, and lost after putting up much ingenious but unavailing resistance. In the sixth game Anderssen, with White, introduced the move that has, ironically, become associated with his name: 1 P-QR3. His idea was to play a Sicilian Defense with colors reversed after 1 . . . P-K4; 2 P-QB4, in which he could prevent the opening of the position, and take advantage of Morphy's very real dislike of closed games. This plan (which, incidentally, is difficult to reconcile with the popular notion of Anderssen as a purely tactical player) proved very effective: in the inaugural game, White got a very good position out of the opening, and lost only after a whole series of weak moves in the later middle game.

The seventh game was Morphy's best of the match:

**CENTER COUNTER DEFENSE**  
**White: Morphy Black: Anderssen**

1 P-K4	P-Q4
2 PxP	QxP
3 N-QB3	Q-QR4
4 P-Q4	P-K4

This move is obviously premature because it opens up the game in White's favor. Modern practitioners of this defense, few as they are, prefer 4 . . . N-KB3; 5 N-B3, B-N5; 6 P-KR3 but now both 6 . . . BxN and 6 . . . B-R4; 7 P-KN4, B-N3; 8 N-K5, P-B3; 9 P-KR4 (Botvinnik-Konstantinopolsky, USSR Championship, 1952) are in White's favor.

5 PxP

The most famous—and funniest—game with this line is Tarrasch-Mieses, Göteborg, 1920: 5 N-B3, B-QN5; 6 B-Q2, B-N5; 7 B-K2, PxP; 8 NxP, Q-K4; 9 QN-N5, BxB; 10 QxB, BxBch; 11 KxB, QxQch; 12 KxQ, N-QR3; 13 KR-K1±.

5	QxPch
6 B-K2	B-QN5
7 N-B3	

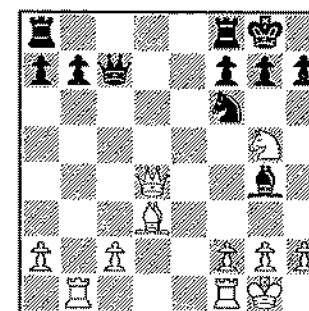
Steinitz has criticized this pawn sacrifice as unnecessary, as indeed it is, but it would have been fairer to add that it is also perfectly sound.

7	BxNch
8 PxB	QxPch
9 B-Q2	Q-B4
10 R-QN1	N-QB3
11 0-0	N-B3
12 B-KB4	

This move wins back the pawn and still leaves White with an advantage in development. The Hungarian master Geza Maroczy, in his book of Morphy's games, recommends instead 12 R-N5, Q-Q3; 13 R-K1, 0-0; 14 Q-B1 which is also very strong. Morphy has thus been criticized for sacking the pawn, and criticized for winning it back; a common fate for players whose games have been annotated many times over. Here again the real difference between the two lines is largely a matter of taste.

12	0-0
13 BxP	N-Q5!
14 QxN	QxB
15 B-Q3	B-N5
16 N-N5	

**ANDERSSSEN**



**MORPHY**

16 KR-Q1?

Black's game is very difficult. If 16 . . . B-R4; 17 N-K4, N-N5; 18 N-N3, P-QN3, offered by Sergeant, then 19 R-N5 wins immediately. But the obvious 16 . . . QR-Q1; 17 Q-N4, B-B1 was better than the text.

17 Q-N4 B-B1 18 KR-K1 P-QR4

On 18 . . . P-KR3, Maroczy gives 19 R-K7, B-Q2 (19 . . . R-Q2; 20 B-R7ch!); 20 NxP, N-Q4; 21 NxPch, PxN; 22 B-B4, Q-B3; 23 Q-N3, Q-KN3; 24 BxNch, K-B1; 25 Q-QR3 and wins.

19 Q-K7 QxQ 20 RxQ N-Q4

Better, but hardly adequate, was 20 . . . P-R3; 21 NxP, K-B1; 22 QR-K1, N-Q4; 23 R-K5, KxN; 24 RxN etc.

21 BxPch K-R1	23 R-K1 NxP	25 B-Q3 Resigns
22 RxBP N-B6	24 R-B4 R-R3	

In the eighth game, Anderssen played 1 P-QR3 again, and this time drew in 51 moves. If he thought he was about to make a comeback, however, the ninth game must quickly have disabused him:

**Sicilian Defense**

*White: Morphy Black: Anderssen* 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 P-Q4, PxP; 3 N-KB3, N-QB3; 4 NxP, P-K3; 5 N-N5, P-Q3; 6 B-KB4, P-K4; 7 B-K3, P-B4? (For 7 . . . P-QR3 see Fischer-Petrosian, Candi-



dates' Match, 1971, p. 252.); 8 QN-B3, P-B5; 9 N-Q5, PxB; 10 N/N-B7ch, K-B2; 11 Q-B3ch, N-B3; 12 B-B4, N-Q5; 13 NxNch, P-Q4; 14 BxPch, K-N3?? (14 . . . K-K2!); 15 Q-R5ch, KxN; 16 PxP!, NxPch; 17 K-K2, Resigns

It is a warm tribute to Anderssen's fighting spirit that, after this debacle, he actually came back to win the tenth game (with 1 P-QR3 again), but Morphy won the eleventh, a French Defense, and so scored the required seven victories.

After this match—Morphy's only encounter, by the way, with a player whose stature in the history of chess even remotely approaches his own—Morphy lingered in Europe for several months giving occasional exhibitions and receiving accolades of various kinds. In May 1859 he returned to the States, stopping in the northeast for a while—mostly in New York, with excursions to Boston and Philadelphia—while he enjoyed the unqualified admiration of the American chess world. It was at a banquet in New York that the first signs of that terrible disillusionment that was later to turn into something much worse became evident. On May 25, 1859, he was feted at Columbia University, where an inlaid chess-board and set of golden and silver chessmen, worth in total about \$1700, were presented to him. Colonel Charles Mead, a prominent figure in New York chess circles and chairman of the reception committee, made a speech in which he called chess a profession, and Morphy its most brilliant exponent. In the words of one of Morphy's biographers:

Morphy took exception to being characterized as a professional player, even by implication, and he resented it in such a way as to overwhelm Colonel Mead with confusion. Such was his mortification at this untoward event that Colonel Mead withdrew from further participation in the Morphy demonstration. [Quoted in Sergeant, from Charles F. Buck, *Paul Morphy: His Later Life*]

This episode, bizarre in itself, takes on added significance in the light of later developments. Morphy soon returned to New Orleans and attempted to set up a law practice, but according to

Buck, who has been followed by all later writers on Morphy, no one would take him seriously; they all regarded him merely as a great chessplayer. The inherent improbability of this is obvious: a man who has achieved success in a highly prestigious intellectual pastime such as chess should have little difficulty convincing people that he is competent in other fields as well.

As if Morphy's troubles over his career were not enough, Buck goes on to relate that "he became enamoured of a wealthy and handsome young lady in New Orleans and informed a mutual friend of the fact, who broached the subject to the lady; but she scorned the idea of marrying 'a mere chessplayer.'" Sergeant rather ingenuously notes that "Buck . . . had the assistance of Morphy's relatives and friends in compiling the story of his later years"; what information other, more objective, sources available to a contemporary might have provided, had Buck troubled to resort to them, we shall probably never know.

There can be no doubt that Morphy subsequently developed what in the language of amateur psychiatry is called a persecution complex. This delusion took several forms. He became convinced that his brother-in-law had bilked him out of a portion of his father's estate. The protracted litigation that followed (Morphy prepared and argued his own case) might be an episode out of the Dickens novel *Bleak House*; the expenses he incurred drove him close to penury, and his case was ultimately thrown out of court. He also came to believe that his brother-in-law was trying to poison him.

Morphy continued to play some chess until at least 1869, mostly at the odds of a knight against his boyhood friend Charles Maurian. He came gradually to loathe the game, however, and during his last years it was impossible to talk to him on the subject. Whether in fact chess drove him mad, or his hatred of the game was merely a concomitant of his madness, is of course impossible to determine. At any rate, the story of Morphy, within the context of a history of the world chess championship, properly ends after his return from his first triumphal journey to Europe, where he proved himself without doubt the best player in the world. He died July 10, 1884, of a cerebral hemorrhage, thus bringing to a quiet close what was perhaps the most melancholy chapter in the history of chess.

After Morphy's retirement from the game, Anderssen was again quite naturally regarded as the strongest active player. He had learned from his defeat in Paris a lesson to which he himself gave eloquent expression immediately after the match: "It is impossible to keep one's excellence in a little glass casket, like a jewel, to take it out whenever wanted. On the contrary, it can only be conserved by continuous and good practice." (Quoted by numerous authorities e.g. Sergeant—original source unknown.) In 1861 he returned to London to play a match against the young master Ignatz Kolisch, then twenty-two; Anderssen, relying on closed and semi-closed openings—Bird's Opening (1 P-KB4) with White, the Sicilian Defense with Black—scored a narrow victory, +4—3=2. The following year he won a major tournament in London, finishing ahead of most of the leading masters of the day, including a promising newcomer from Austria, William Steinitz. He was slightly disappointed, however, when he drew a short match against one of Morphy's old rivals, Louis Paulsen, who had finished second to him in the tournament. Nevertheless, Anderssen in those years must have had every reason to be satisfied with his life, both in and out of chess. In 1865 he received an honorary doctorate from the University of Breslau.

## 2

### *William Steinitz*

**Y**OUNG William Steinitz had finished only sixth in the big London tournament of 1862, but he had played some brilliant games in a style that earned him the nickname, in an age partial to nicknames, of "the Austrian Morphy." The accomplishment had netted him all of £5—not a very impressive sum even to a man whose life up to then had been lived mostly hand to mouth. He was born into poverty in the city of Prague, then the capital of Bohemia and a part of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, on May 17, 1836. His parents wanted him to become a rabbi, but he displayed such an early aptitude for mathematics that he was sent off instead to prepare for admission to a university. In 1857 he entered the Vienna Polytechnicum—at such a relatively late age doubtless because he had had trouble scraping up the necessary fees. During his two years in attendance he gave lessons in mathematics and did occasional journalism, but found it increasingly difficult to survive.

Steinitz had learned to play chess at the age of twelve, and by the time he was twenty was the strongest player in Prague. It was to chess he turned in Vienna, dropping out of school and becoming a professional, which meant at first that he played offhand games for small stakes in the cafés of the city. The best way to make a living at chess in those days, however, was to find a patron, and it was at least partly to this end that Steinitz played in the slashingly sacrificial style that he was later to do so much to eliminate from

master practice. At the time, though, he exercised to the full his quite considerable gifts for combination and speculative play.

Steinitz slowly made a name for himself in Vienna chess circles, and when, in 1861, he won the championship of the Vienna Chess Club, which meant in effect that he was the strongest player in Austria, sufficient backing was found to send him off to compete in the great tournament at London the next year. After the London tournament, Steinitz elected to remain in England, where he continued to play in the coffeehouses for small stakes and also engaged in a series of minor tournaments and matches. In 1862 he played in another, very much smaller, London tournament and won 7-0. In the same year he engaged in a nine-game match with an Italian player of small reputation named Dubois and won 5-3, with one draw. This match is of some interest if only because a hundred years later, when Bobby Fischer began writing a monthly column for the magazine *Chess Life* (now *Chess Life and Review*), one of the first things he did in it was to annotate all the games of the Steinitz-Dubois match (*CL*, April, July, August, November, December 1964). Before that time Fischer was known to have been studying nineteenth-century games and opening manuals, and those of Steinitz in particular, but just why all that led him to trot out for display the games of this match is a mystery. Steinitz, at any rate, could have been pleased neither with the final result nor with his play.

There followed a far more gratifying victory over the talented Englishman John Blackburne, whom he defeated 7-1, with 2 draws. He also won two other matches against English amateurs, a small tournament at Dublin in 1865, and two British Chess Association congresses in 1866. This almost inconsequent activity led, of all things, to a match against Anderssen.

There is no hard evidence to tell us precisely how this match came to be arranged, but it is reasonable to suppose that Steinitz, presumably by his daring sacrificial play, had excited the admiration of some wealthy Englishmen who decided to put up the money. At any rate money (£100 to the winner, £60 to the loser) was forthcoming, and Anderssen once more made the journey to London.

Before the match began, the betting was 2-1 on Anderssen—the eighteen-year age difference between the two (Steinitz was thirty, Anderssen forty-eight) counted for much less in popular estimation than the simple fact that Steinitz had never really done anything to lead people to believe him a match for the best player in the world. A good argument could be made that his finest accomplishment to that time was his sixth-place finish at London in 1862, where Anderssen was first. Thus, when Anderssen won the first game as White in an Evans Gambit it must have prompted no more than some wise nodding among the assembled multitude.

Steinitz, however, never did have much patience with *hoi polloi*, singly or in groups. One anecdote about him concerns a fellow who had the temerity one day to come up to him and remark, "Herr Steinitz, I really cannot understand your play in this game." "Naturally," Steinitz is said to have replied. "Did you ever see a monkey toying with a watch?" Playing with like audacity, he won the second game with a now discredited line of the King's Gambit in 53 moves.

Steinitz also won the third game, and the fourth, and fifth. With the score 4-1 against him, Anderssen, who appeared headed for the second disaster of his illustrious career, could hardly have helped remembering the first: in that match, also, he had won the first game and then incurred a string of defeats that led, inevitably, to desperate efforts to make up lost ground that, also inevitably, backfired. He probably also came to reflect on the vast difference between his previous opponent and his present one, between the slight, almost girlish appearance and aristocratic manners of Morphy, and Steinitz' squat figure and aggressive personality. He himself was eight years older than when he had faced Morphy, but he had also learned much. In the sixth game he played a Sicilian Defense, combined aggressive defense with counterattack, and won in 54 moves.

With this game the tide of battle turned, at least temporarily. The seventh game, with Anderssen White, was another Evans Gambit: the older man won in 34 moves, making the score 4-3. In the eighth game, he felt sufficiently confident to answer 1 P-K4 with 1 . . . P-K4:

# KING'S GAMBIT

White: Steinitz Black: Anderssen

1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 P-KB4, PxP; 3 N-KB3, P-KN4.

Thanks to a famous article by Bobby Fischer ("The King's Gambit is Busted," *American Chess Bulletin*, June 1961), 3... P-Q3 is now usually played here; one of the points is that after 4 P-Q4, P-KN4; 5 P-KR4, P-N5; White cannot play 6 N-K5. This order of moves, however, brings with it other problems that are as yet unsolved. After hundreds of years of intensive analysis and practical play, the King's Gambit is still a going concern.

4 B-B4 P-N5 5 N-K5

The apparently carefree move 5 0-0 constitutes the Muzio Gambit (actually no one but a genius or a fool would go into any of these lines without long hours of intensive preparation behind him—and even some geniuses have been known to do homework on occasion). The Muzio Gambit is thought nowadays to lead to a quick draw.

5 Q-R5ch 6 K-B1

Black is now at a crossroads. The people whose names are attached to the various lines of play that can arise in this position were all seemingly tireless analysts who, save for the brief notice accorded their brain-children in the opening books, have been completely forgotten. There's a moral in that, somewhere.

6 N-KR3

The Silberschmidt Gambit. Anderssen played this move four times in this match, winning this game and losing the others. The strongest move in the position is 6... N-QB3 (the Herzfeld Gambit—although for all these lines it would probably be more accurate to speak of So-and-so's move). After 6... N-QB3; 7 NxBP (7 BxPch, K-K2; 8 NxNch, QPxN; 9 BxN, RxB; 10 Q-K1, P-N6; 11 P-Q4, P-B6±), B-B4; 8 Q-K1, P-N6; 9 NxR, B-B7; 10 Q-Q1, N-B3; 11 P-Q4, P-Q4; 12 PxP, B-N5; 13 B-K2, QNxP, Black wins (analysis by Keres). Two other moves in this position, both perfectly playable, are 6... P-B6 and 6... N-KB3, attributed to Cochrane and Salvio, respectively (although just what the Salvio Gambit is—the name is sometimes applied to the whole line—remains something of a puzzle).

7 P-Q4 P-Q3

Anderssen played this move in all four games, although even at the time of this match it was known to be inferior to 7... P-B6. Of the play after 7... P-B6, Keres offers the following witty analysis: 8

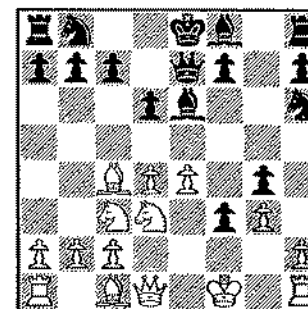
P-KN3, Q-R6ch; 9 K-B2, Q-N7ch; 10 K-K3, P-KB4!; 11 N-Q3, PxP; 12 N-B4, N-B4ch; 13 KxP, P-Q4ch; 14 BxP, N-Q3ch with advantage to Black (15 K-Q3, B-B4ch, or 15 K-K3, B-R3).

8 N-Q3 P-B6 9 P-KN3 Q-K2

In the second game Anderssen played 9... Q-R6ch?, but after 10 K-K1, discovered that on 10... Q-N7??, White has 11 N-B2, trapping the queen. Thus, he played 10... Q-R4 instead, but still had a very bad game.

10 N-B3 B-K3

ANDERSEN



STEINITZ

11 P-Q5?

In the tenth game Steinitz here chose 11 B-N3, which is of course much better. The antipositional text move is a prelude to the unsound sacrificial combination which follows.

11 B-B1 12 P-K5

This, and the following knight sacrifice, are consistent and positionally necessary—otherwise Black would play to control the dark squares in the center by... N-Q2 and... B-N2. Black's resources, however, prove more than adequate to meet White's attack.

12 PxP 13 NxP QxN 14 B-B4 Q-N2

Much better than 14... Q-R4 (recommended by Löwenthal), because of 15 Q-Q4, with obscure complications to follow. Anderssen prefers to retain control of the central dark squares, and has a clever counter-sacrifice in the works.

15 N-N5 B-Q3

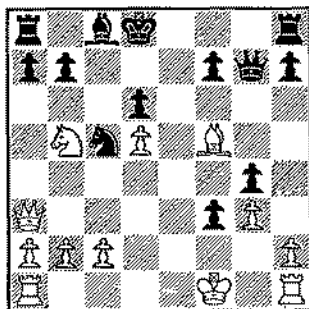
And not 15 . . . N-R3; 16 Q-K1ch, K-Q1; 17 P-Q6! when White will be able to open lines against the enemy king.

16 Q-K1ch

After 16 BxB, PxB; 17 N-B7ch, K-Q1; 18 NxR, N-B4 Black has a winning position.

16	K-Q1	18 Q-N4 N-B4	20 Q-R3 N-B4
17 BxB	PxB	19 B-Q3 N-QR3	21 BxN

ANDERSSSEN



STEINITZ

If now 21 . . . BxB, then of course 22 NxQP, and White is suddenly very much back in the game. Anderssen, however, has a little surprise in store.

21 Q-R3!

With threats of 22 . . . Q-R6ch and 22 . . . Q-Q7!.

22 B-Q3 R-K1

Again threatening . . . Q-R6ch with mate to follow.

23 P-R4 Q-Q7 24 R-KN1 R-K7! Resigns

With this amusing little game, Anderssen tied the score, and seemed to be well on his way to victory after a rocky start. He won the next game as well, pulling ahead 5-4. Steinitz, however, displaying that tenacity that came in later life to be his most salient

characteristic—one might almost say his downfall—drew the tenth game, forged ahead in the eleventh, 6-5, and once again appeared to have driven his opponent to the wall. But Anderssen came back to win the twelfth game and pull even once more.

In the thirteenth game, Anderssen abandoned the Evans Gambit and tried a Ruy Lopez:

White: Anderssen Black: Steinitz 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-B3 (*Anderssen had played this, the Berlin Defense, as Black against Morphy—see p. 11*); 4 P-Q3 (*Morphy played 4 P-Q4*). Usual nowadays is 4 0-0 and now 4 . . . P=Q3 transposes into the Steinitz Defense. P-Q3; 5 BxNch? (*Best for White is 5 P-B3, followed by QN-Q2-B1-K3 or N3, a maneuver Steinitz had not yet invented. In the ensuing middlegame White plays consistently to exploit Black's weakened queen-side pawns—but the pawns aren't really weak.*), PxB; 6 P-KR3, P-N3; 7 N-B3, B-N2; 8 0-0, 0-0; 9 B-N5, P-KR3; 10 B-K3, P-B4; 11 R-N1, N-K1; 12 P-QN4, PxP; 13 RxB, P-QB4; 14 R-R4? (*Consistent, but un-availing. There is nothing better than 14 R-N1.*), B-Q2; 15 R-R3, P-B4; 16 Q-N1, K-R1; 17 Q-N7, P-QR4; 18 R-N1, P-R5; 19 Q-Q5, Q-B1; 20 R-N6, R-R2; 21 K-R2, P-KB5; 22 B-Q2, P-N4; 23 Q-B4, Q-Q1; 24 R-N1, N-B3; 25 K-N1, N-R2; 26 K-B1, P-R4; (*This kind of kingside pawn storm is familiar from a host of games played in the 1950's and early 1960's, usually arising from the King's Indian Defense. Anderssen defends fairly well—26 K-B1 correctly prepares for the subsequent retreat of the knight to N1, and offers possibilities of escape to the queen-side—but the awkward positions of his pieces, especially the rook on R3, make his task just too difficult against an attacking player of Steinitz' caliber.*); 27 N-N1, P-N5; 28 PxP, PxP; 29 P-B3, Q-R5; 30 N-Q1, N-N4; 31 B-K1, Q-R7; 32 P-Q4 (*A fruitless attempt on Anderssen's part to activate his stranded rook.*), NPxP; 33 NPxP, N-R6; 34 B-B2, NxN; 35 PxBP, Q-R6ch; 36 K-K1 (*36 KxN, R-KN1++*), NxPch; 37 RxN, QxR; 38 N-B3, PxP; 39 BxB, R-QB2; 40 N-Q5, RxB; 41 QxR, QxPch; 42 K-B2, R-B1; 43 N-B7, Q-K6ch; Resigns

When Anderssen, demoralized and exhausted, lost the fourteenth game as well, Steinitz had scored a hard-earned match victory



against the player who up till then had been almost universally recognized as the strongest in the world. Whether that victory actually entitled Steinitz to be called champion of the world is of course a matter of opinion; whether Steinitz himself claimed to be so is unknown. He gained immensely in prestige after his unexpected triumph, but there is no evidence that he attempted to exploit his newly achieved reputation, either as an active player or as a journalist. The first we hear of the title *per se* is the claim in the articles of the Steinitz-Zukertort match of 1886 that the world championship was at issue, but there is no indication in contemporary accounts that Steinitz was the titleholder and Zukertort his challenger. Had Steinitz actually claimed the title at the time of his victory over Anderssen, he would have placed himself in a position analogous to that of John L. Sullivan, who about that same time was storming into saloons and bawling "I can lick any man in the house!" Perhaps no one would have challenged his claim, at least not openly, but perhaps also no one would have taken it very seriously.

Steinitz' next chess encounter was a match against the erratic English master Harry Bird. Bird, who is today chiefly remembered for his opening (1 P-KB4) and his defense to the Ruy Lopez (1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-Q5), was a much stronger player than is nowadays usually supposed, but doubtless the score of the match, 6-5 in Steinitz' favor, with five draws, must have been a grievous disappointment to Steinitz. For the rest of his life Bird stoutly maintained that Morphy could have given Steinitz pawn-and-move, and while this particularly noxious form of one-upmanship does not, in itself, merit comment, it is perhaps suggestive of the spirit in which Steinitz' pretensions to the world title, if he did indeed make any, were greeted in some circles.

Steinitz' results in tournament play over the next few years were also mediocre. At a small tournament at Dundee in 1867 he was second, behind the German master Neumann. It was here that he played for the first time the Steinitz Gambit (1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 P-KB4, PxP; 3 P-Q4, Q-R5ch; 4 K-K2!), with which he experimented on and off throughout his career. In Paris in the same year he was again second, behind Ignaz Kolisch, and in this tournament also he introduced a difficult line of play of which he made frequent use in the years that followed: 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3;

3 P-Q4 (the Scotch Game), PxP; 4 NxP, Q-R5. Black's fourth move wins a pawn, but after 5 N-N5, B-N5ch; 6 QN-B3, BxNch; 7 PxB, K-Q1 White has obvious compensation. Steinitz, however, maintained that the defense enjoyed sufficient resources to withstand White's onslaught, and that Black could simplify into the endgame with material advantage. He himself did just that in several games, most notably in his second match against Blackburne, but few other players in all the history of chess would willingly have burdened themselves with such an onerous defensive task.

That Steinitz did so, and did so cheerfully, indicates that some drastic changes had taken place in both his style and his whole outlook on the game. It was during this period, in fact, that Steinitz underwent perhaps the most radical alteration of style evident in the career of any top player, from a carefree attacking approach in a manner that was the heritage in part of the seventeenth-century Italians, to that of a man whose teachings about the fundamentals of position play were to influence virtually all the great players who came after him. In 1872 he obtained a post as chess columnist on the *Field*, a prestigious and, by his standards, lucrative position that enabled him to retire temporarily from active play. In his writings over that period there emerged both new standards of chess journalism—his obviously great analytical powers were supplemented by a thoroughness and integrity that had never before been devoted to the explication of a mere game—and, slowly, with a whole new theory about the nature of the game itself.

Of Steinitz' teachings, no one has written better than Dr. Euwe:

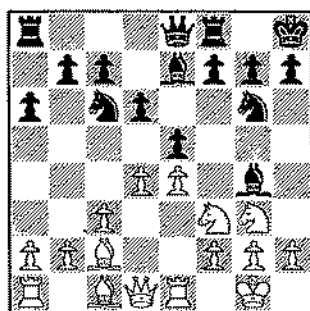
Steinitz laid down the principle of positional equilibrium. In general, advantages for both sides can be found in any position. So long as these advantages more or less cancel each other out the position is in equilibrium. Each player should seek to minimize the defects of his own position—for example by improving the placing of the pieces or by dissolving a doubled pawn—and at the same time to build up his own advantages. All the time one should be striving to upset the balance of the position in one's own favor, patiently biding one's time the while. At this stage forcing operations usually lead to disadvantage.

In positions of equilibrium correct play will automatically lead to new positions of equilibrium. The balance will be destroyed not by one's own good play but rather by misjudgments on the part of one's opponent. . . .

Furthermore, Steinitz taught not only that it is incorrect to attack before the balance of the position has been significantly upset, but that when that moment comes one not only *may* attack, but *must*, otherwise the advantage will be lost. [Max Euwe, *The Development of Chess Style*]

The trouble with all this, of course, is that one's opponent may not make any mistakes. If both sides play perfectly, the game will be a draw, an outcome that some players, like José Capablanca, could face with equanimity, but that was abhorrent—in theory, at least—both to Steinitz himself and to his successor, Emanuel Lasker. In practice, both Steinitz and Lasker went to sometimes incredible lengths to induce their opponents to make mistakes, even if that meant incurring great risks themselves. As expressed in Dr. Euwe's concise and logical prose, Steinitz' theory seems almost mechanical. Over the board, however, it occasionally rose to the heights illustrated by Steinitz' game against Lasker played at the Hastings tournament of 1895. In the following position, arising

STEINITZ



LASKER

after Black's 12th move, Lasker played 13 P-Q5. Steinitz replied 13 . . . N-N1, and on 14 P-KR3, answered 14 . . . B-B1. After

the further 15 N-B5, B-Q1, the annotator of this game in the tournament book, Isidor Gunsberg, wrote:

Black has now completed his strategic movement towards the rear. If this is good strategy, then the modern theory of development must be all wrong. One fact, however, must be borne in mind. Black, having all his pieces concentrated on his base, is certainly less assailable, and should White rashly advance against that formation, Black might probably be able to break up the White line with advantage to himself.

Gunsberg was a player of the old school—a loose phrase in this context that means the people who learned from Morphy to bring out their pieces quickly and put them on the best squares—and his note shows admirable restraint and understanding. If White had attacked rashly his attempts would probably have recoiled—especially against a defensive player of Steinitz' caliber. Lasker, however, systematically strengthened his position, secured his huge advantage in space—a factor of which Steinitz was often insufficiently mindful—and won the game.

In 1882 Steinitz returned to active play by taking part in the great international tournament held that year at Vienna: a double-round event with eighteen players. The field included both old rivals like Blackburne and Zukertort and at least one promising newcomer, the Russian Mikhail Ivanovich Tchigorin. It also included an ordinarily mediocre player named Simon Winawer, who is remembered today only because a popular variation of the French Defense (1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, B-N5) bears his name; Vienna, 1882, however, was his one great success and the end of the long thirty-four-game schedule found him tied with Steinitz for first place. Steinitz had started very badly, and at the midpoint of the tournament was no higher than eleventh, but he persisted, despite catastrophic defeats by Zukertort and Tchigorin, and ultimately caught up to the leader. He also lost the first game of a two-game playoff match against Winawer, but won the second and so shared first prize.

At his next tournament, played at London the next year, Steinitz was second, a full three points behind Zukertort. It was this result that brought Zukertort to the fore as a prospective match opponent for Steinitz, despite the crushing defeat the latter had inflicted on

his younger rival more than a decade before. There began protracted, and increasingly acrimonious, negotiations between them; much of it centered on who was to be considered the reigning titleholder and who the challenger. Both, although native speakers of German, had taught themselves to write sprightly English prose, largely of the polemical sort: each wrote many letters to various English and American newspapers explaining how the other was evading a decisive encounter.

In 1883 Steinitz made a long tour of America, and his enthusiastic reception by the chess public prompted him to desert England and the "literary hooting" of his enemies of the London press and settle permanently in the United States. In 1885 he founded the *International Chess Magazine*, and, late in the same year, finally came to an agreement with Zukertort about terms for a world championship match.

Johannes Hermann Zukertort was born in Lublin, Poland, on September 7, 1842, of a Polish mother and a German father. When he was thirteen the family moved to Breslau, where, as a university student several years later, he became the chess pupil of Adolf Anderssen. He quickly acquired a love for chess, which did not, however, prevent him from completing his studies, and in 1865 he received a degree in medicine from the University of Breslau.

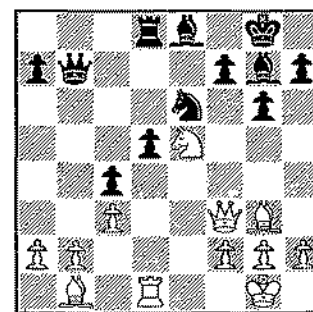
A bare list of Zukertort's attainments is sufficient to confirm his reputation as one of the most amazing men of the nineteenth century: he was fluent in twelve languages; a writer on such diversified subjects as theology, prison reform, and music; one of the best whist players of his time; and an excellent fencer and pistol shot. He had also been a soldier—he fought in the Prussian army in three wars and received a total of nine medals for bravery. It was against this Renaissance man that William Steinitz, who had devoted his whole life to chess, sat down to play for the world championship on that day in January 1886 mentioned in the opening paragraph of this book.

The winner of the match was to be the first player to score ten victories, draws not counting. It was to be played in three American cities, beginning in New York and shifting, after one player or the other had scored three wins, to St. Louis, and thence for the last part of the match to New Orleans. At the time of the match Steinitz was fifty years old, Zukertort forty-four.

In the first game Zukertort was White, and played a Queen's Gambit, which Steinitz declined: 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 P-K3, B-B4; 4 N-QB3, P-K3; 5 N-B3, N-Q2; 6 P-QR3, B-Q3; 7 P-B5? (Zukertort was to commit this elementary positional error again in the third and nineteenth games, getting a lost game each time. He actually won the third game, after Black had spoiled his position with several weak moves, but lost the other two. Once White has relieved the tension in the center, Black can strike back with . . . P-K4 or . . . P-QN3 or both.) 7 B-B2; 8 P-QN4, P-K4!; 9 B-K2, KN-B3; 10 B-N2, P-K5; 11 N-Q2, P-KR4; 12 P-KR3, N-B1; 13 P-QR4, N-N3; 14 P-N5, N-R5; 15 P-N3, N-N7ch; 16 K-B1, NxPch; 17 PxN, KBxP; 18 K-N2, B-B2; 19 Q-KN1, R-R3; 20 K-B1, R-N3; 21 Q-B2, Q-Q2; 22 PxP, PxP; 23 R-KN1, BxPch; 24 K-K1, N-N5; 25 BxN, BxB; 26 N-K2, Q-K2; 27 N-KB4, R-R3; 28 B-B3, P-N4; 29 N-K2, R-B3; 30 Q-N2, R-B6; 31 N-KB1, R-N1; 32 K-Q2, P-B4; 33 P-R5, P-B5; 34 R-R1, Q-B2; 35 R-K1, PxPch; 36 NxP, R-B7; 37 QxR, QxQ; 38 NxB, B-B5ch; 39 K-B2, PxN; 40 B-Q2, P-K6; 41 B-B1, Q-N7; 42 K-B3, K-Q2; 43 R-R7ch, K-K3; 44 R-R6ch, K-B4; 45 BxP, BxB; 46 R-B1ch, B-B5; White Resigns.

Undaunted, Zukertort came back to win the next three games in New York, and a fourth in St. Louis. Steinitz' play, apart from the results, appeared very shaky: not only did he throw away a strategically won position in the third game, but in the fourth he committed a horrible tactical blunder. In the position below, Steinitz

ZUKERTORT



STEINITZ

(White) played 37 NxQBP, thinking the queen's pawn pinned. Only after 37 . . . PxN did he realize that 38 QxQ allows mate on the back rank; play continued 38 RxR, NxR; 39 Q-K2, N-K3; Resigns.

In the fifth game, Steinitz got a bad opening, and never recovered:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

White: Zukertort Black: Steinitz 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 N-QB3, N-B3; 4 P-K3, B-B4?; 5 PxP, PxP; 6 Q-N3, B-B1 (Best.); 7 N-B3, N-B3; 8 N-K5, P-K3; 9 B-N5, Q-B2; 10 B-Q2, B-Q3; 11 P-B4, O-O; 12 R-QB1, BxN; 13 BPxB, N-K1; 14 O-O, P-B3; 15 B-Q3, R-B2; 16 Q-B2, P-B4; 17 N-K2, B-Q2; 18 R-B2, R-QB1; 19 B-B3, Q-N3; 20 Q-Q2, N-K2; 21 QR-B1, B-N4; 22 B-N1, Q-R3; 23 P-KN4, P-KN3; 24 P-KR3, R-B2; 25 R-K1, N-N2; 26 N-B4, N-B1; 27 PxP; NPxP; 28 R-N2, K-R1; 29 K-R2, Q-B3; 30 R/1-KN1, N-K2; 31 Q-KB2, Q-K1; 32 RxN, Resigns

After this game, the match shifted to St. Louis, and resumed there on February 3. Steinitz was now in much the same position as he had been against Anderssen twenty years earlier. Unlike the Anderssen match, however, which, once Steinitz had arrested his initial slide, turned into a tense struggle, this one witnessed what is perhaps the most throughgoing reversal of fortune in the history of world championship play. Steinitz won the sixth game, a Ruy Lopez, after protracted maneuvering, and in the seventh introduced into master play an idea that came later to be incorporated into what is still known as the Steinitz Variation of the Queen's Gambit:

#### QUEEN'S GAMBIT

White: Zukertort Black: Steinitz  
1 P-Q4 P-Q4 3 N-QB3 N-KB3  
2 P-QB4 P-K3 4 P-K3

In the fifteenth, seventeenth, and nineteenth games of this match Zukertort played 4 B-N5 here, a move later popularized by the American player Harry Pillsbury.

4 P-B4 5 N-B3 N-B3

And this is the so-called normal position of the Tarrasch Defense, of course not known by that name until many years later. Much of what even club players know about the queen's-pawn openings today was *terra incognita* in 1886.

6 P-QR3

This move is still played occasionally by people anxious to avoid the by now well-analyzed variations that arise after 6 BPxP, KNxP, the quaintly named Semi-Tarrasch Defense (as opposed to the Tarrasch Defense proper, when Black takes back with the pawn on his Q4). After 6 P-QR3, the game can transpose, as here, into the Queen's Gambit Accepted, or, with 6 . . . B-K2; 7 QPxP, into the Queen's Gambit Accepted with colors reversed.

6 QPxP 7 BxP PxP

Here is Steinitz' then new idea: to isolate White's queen's pawn, blockade it, by stationing a piece (preferably a knight) on Black's Q4, and later win it. Nearly a hundred years of subsequent analysis and practice has failed to discover whether the plan is sound or not. The side that possesses the isolated queen's pawn obtains, in return for the admitted positional weakness, several countervailing advantages: greater freedom for his pieces, the strong square K5 for his knight, and various tactical possibilities centering around the advance of the isolated pawn. In the '30's, future world champion Mikhail Botvinnik played several excellent games in which he demonstrated the possibilities for White in variations of this sort, and in the 1969 match between Boris Spassky and Tigran Petrosian, Spassky showed that an isolated queen's pawn can offer dynamic possibilities for Black as well.

8 PxP B-K2 9 O-O O-O

This position could conceivably arise in modern play by transposition from the Nimzo-Indian Defense. White should now try 10 Q-Q3! immediately, followed by B-KN5, QR-Q1, and KR-K1 with somewhat the better of it. The bishop on KN5 offers tactical possibilities involving the key move P-Q5, while on K3 it serves merely to obstruct the king file.

10 B-K3? B-Q2 11 Q-Q3

White's best now is 11 P-Q5, liquidating the isolated pawn and leading to a level position.

11 R-B1 12 QR-B1

White's rooks belong on Q1 and K1, as indicated previously. In appraising Zukertort's play in this game it is important to remember that, having no knowledge of precedent on which to draw, he was confronted with what are really immensely difficult strategical problems, whereas any modern master would put his pieces on the correct squares almost as a matter of course.

12	Q-R4	14	KR-K1	B-K1	
13	B-R2	KR-Q1	15	B-N1	P-KN3

White has no attack, and so Black can proceed to train his pieces against the isolated pawn; it is hardly an exaggeration to say that Black has achieved a strategically won game.

16	Q-K2	B-B1	18	B-R2	N-K2
17	KR-Q1	B-N2	19	Q-Q2	

A superficial move, the sole point of which seems to be the cheapo N-Q5; both 19 R-Q2, to double rooks on the queen file, or 19 B-N5, to answer 19 . . . N-B4 with 20 P-Q5! are better.

19	Q-R3!	20	B-N5	N-B4	21	P-KN4?
----	-------	----	------	------	----	--------

Now 21 P-Q5 is of course answered by 21 . . . B-B3, thanks to the unhappy position of the White queen, but Emanuel Lasker's recommendation 21 Q-K1 with a view to—guess what?—is better than the rather scatterbrained move in the text.

21	NxQP!	22	NxN	P-K4	23	N-Q5
----	-------	----	-----	------	----	------

Hardly any worse than 23 Q-K2, PxN; 24 QxQ, PxQ; 25 N-Q5, RxR; 26 RxR, RxN, when Black emerges from the complications with a strong passed pawn.

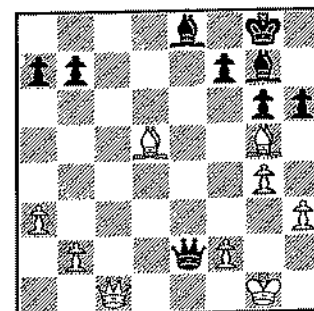
23	RxR	25	RxP	NxN
24	QxR	PxN	26	RxN

On 26 BxR, BxR; 27 BxN, Q-K7 wins quickly.

26	RxR	27	BxR	Q-K7	28	P-R3	P-KR3
----	-----	----	-----	------	----	------	-------

The alternative, 28 . . . BxP, has been the subject of much irrelevant analysis. After 29 Q-B8, Q-Q8ch; 30 K-R2, B-K4ch; 31 P-B4, Q-Q7ch; 32 K-N3!—suggested by Steinitz—Black cannot win.

STEINITZ



ZUKERTORT

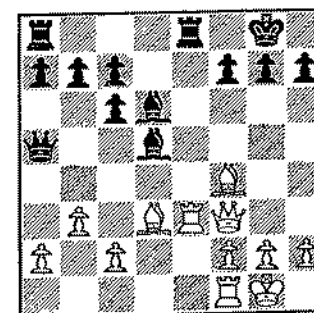
29 B-QB4?

After 29 B-K3 (*obviously not 29 BxRP??, BxB; 30 QxB, Q-Q8ch and QxB*), BxP; 31 Q-N1, K-R2 (*White threatened 32 QxPch*); 32 BxNP, B-N4; 33 B-K4, White has a very difficult position, but can still make a fight of it. The text move loses.

29	Q-B6	32	B-K7	B-K4ch!	35	K-N3	Q-N8ch
30	Q-K3	Q-Q8ch	33	P-B4	BxPch	Resigns	
31	K-R2	B-QB3	34	QxB	Q-R8ch		

With the score 4-3 the players took time out, as it were, for a quick draw in the eighth game. In the ninth, Steinitz pulled even after Zukertort, again White against the Queen's Gambit, pressed too hard for a king-side attack. The scene then shifted to New Orleans, where play was resumed on February 26.

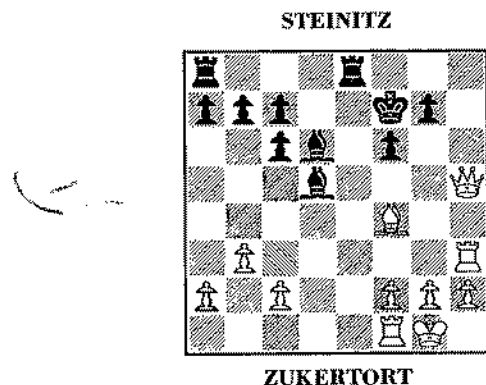
STEINITZ



ZUKERTORT



After drawing with the White pieces in 21 moves in the tenth game, Steinitz, who had apparently decided that defense was, against his present opponent at any rate, the most promising form of attack, achieved the following solid position after 16 moves in the eleventh:



Zukertort, out of patience, played 17 BxPch, KxB; 18 Q-R5ch, K-N1; 19 R-R3—19 P-B4 recovers the piece, but leaves White with little to play for—but after 19 . . . P-B3 had a lost position. After a series of repetitious checks—why Zukertort did not avail himself of the opportunity to claim a draw is a mystery—Steinitz played 31 . . . K-K2! and won easily: 32 R-K3ch, K-B1; 33 Q-R8ch, B-N1; 34 B-R6, R-K2! etc. Steinitz was now in the lead, 5-4.

Steinitz also won the twelfth game, but Zukertort rallied to win the thirteenth, in 86 moves. By that time, however, he was on the verge of collapse from nervous exhaustion, and after struggling on to draw the fourteenth and fifteenth games, went quickly to pieces, losing ultimately by 12½-7½. In the final game Steinitz, playing White, was so confident of victory that he trotted out his crazy gambit; the result is eloquent testimony to the state to which the fragile and highly strung Zukertort had been reduced:

### Steinitz Gambit

White: Steinitz Black: Zukertort 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-QB3, N-QB3; 3 P-B4, PxP; 4 P-Q4, P-Q4; 5 PxP, Q-R5ch; 6 K-K2, Q-

K2ch; 7 K-B2, Q-R5ch; 8 P-KN3, PxPch; 9 K-N2, NxP; 10 PxP, Q-N5; 11 Q-K1ch, B-K2; 12 B-Q3, N-B4; 13 N-B3, B-Q2; 14 B-QB4, P-KB3; 15 N-K4, N/1-R3??; 16 BxN, NxB; 17 RxN, PxR; 18 NxPch, Resigns

Steinitz was now, according to the articles of the match, champion of the world, but he could hardly have expected unanimous recognition of that well-nigh self-proclaimed title unless he asserted his claim again fairly quickly. Thus when on a trip to Havana in January 1888 he was invited by local chess enthusiasts to play a match in that city against an opponent of his choice, he accepted and selected Mikhail Tchigorin as his challenger.

Mikhail Ivanovich Tchigorin, a burly Russian with a thick black beard, was then thirty-eight years of age, and had, until that time, accomplished very little on the international scene, except to earn himself a reputation as a player of the "old school" whose play was

. . . brilliantly attacking and ever towards the King, perhaps best described by the simple word beautiful. He is probably the greatest master of the King's side attack and rarely plays dull games. His chief energy is thrown into the middle game rather than the opening, which he sometimes conducts with too much indifference.

The editor of the Hastings, 1895, tournament book, from which this description is quoted, is expressing the opinion prevailing among Tchigorin's contemporaries; actually Tchigorin was an excellent all-round player and a painstaking student of the openings—it is to his efforts that we are indebted for many opening variations still popular today. He was, however, extremely fond of gambits, and of the king-side attacking play that arises from many gambit lines, and he disliked drawn games to an extent that was almost pathological, at least toward the end of his career. It was probably because of this fondness for gambits that Steinitz chose him for his opponent, so that he could try out ever more tortuous and provocative defenses to Tchigorin's favorite gambit of all, the Evans.

Accordingly a match of twenty games—an unusual arrangement at a time when most matches were decided by the number of wins, draws not counting—was begun on January 20, 1889. Tchigorin made an even score with the Evans Gambit—Steinitz allowed him

to play it seven times, made seemingly suicidal concessions in order to keep the gambit pawn, and managed to save some hopeless positions by his remarkable defensive skill—but fared far worse in the other games, and lost the match by 10½-6½. That the experience of play against an opponent of Steinitz' caliber had done him good was amply proved later in the year when he tied for first in a strong tournament in New York, and so earned himself another shot at the title.

Before the return match against Tchigorin, however, Steinitz took on Isidor Gunsberg in a little-remembered encounter in New York, beginning on December 9, 1890, and continuing through January 1891. Gunsberg, a Hungarian by birth who had settled in England, had come out third in the New York 1889 tournament, and had subsequently drawn a match against Tchigorin by the score of 9-9. He was a rather colorless but very steady player who, remarks to the contrary by his enemies in the British press notwithstanding, deserved a chance to win the world title as much as anybody at that time. The match ended in Steinitz' favor, but by a close score: 6-4, with 9 draws.

In January 1892, Steinitz and Tchigorin were back in Havana, doing battle under the same terms as before. The first game, played on New Years' Day, was yet another Evans, but in this one Tchigorin had things all his own way:

### Evans Gambit

*White: Tchigorin Black: Steinitz* 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-B4, B-B4; 4 P-QN4, BxP; 5 P-B3, B-R4; 6 0-0, P-Q3; 7 P-Q4, B-KN5 (Steinitz played this move six times in this match, varying only in the seventh game, when he tried 7 . . . B-Q2. It was of course some time later that Lasker's Defense, beginning with 7 . . . B-N3, took most of the fun out of playing the Evans.); 8 B-QN5 (In the fifteenth game Tchigorin played 8 Q-R4 here, and after 8 . . . PxP; 9 PxP, P-QR3; 10 B-Q5, B-N3; 11 BxNch, PxP; 12 QxPch, B-Q2; 13 Q-B2, N-K2 had regained the gambit pawn, but had no advantage.), PxP; 9 PxP, B-Q2; 10 B-N2, QN-

K2 (In subsequent games Steinitz substituted 10 . . . N-B3, having found the text too Steinitzian for his taste; 10 . . . QN-K2 is, however, more funny-looking than bad, and is not in itself responsible for the failure of the defense.); 11 BxBch, QxB; 12 N-R3, N-R3; 13 N-B4, B-N3; 14 P-QR4, P-QB3; 15 P-K5+—, P-Q4; 16 N-Q6ch, K-B1; 17 B-R3, K-N1; 18 R-N1, N/3-B4; 19 NxBP!, KxN; 20 P-K6ch, KxP; 21 N-K5, Q-B1; 22 R-K1, K-B3; 23 Q-R5, P-N3; 24 BxNch, KxB; 25 NxNPch, K-B3; 26 NxR, BxP; 27 R-N3, Q-Q2; 28 R-KB3, RxN; 29 P-N4, R-KN1; 30 Q-R6ch, R-N3; 31 RxNch, Resigns (31 . . . QxR; 32 Q-B8ch)

Tchigorin held his one-point lead through the first eight games, won the ninth to go two up, and was still two up after twelve. Then Steinitz scored two consecutive victories to pull even and, with the opponents simply winning by turns thereafter, the match was tied, with 8 wins for each player and 4 draws, after 20 games had been played. It was Steinitz, however, who was holding up better under the strain; the eighteenth game, his finest of the match, shows him playing with undiminished energy:

### Dutch Defense

*White: Steinitz Black: Tchigorin* 1 N-KB3, P-KB4; 2 P-Q4, P-K3; 3 P-B4, N-KB3; 4 N-B3, B-K2; 5 P-Q5!?, PxP; 6 PxP, 0-0; 7 P-KN3, P-Q3; 8 B-N2, QN-Q2; 9 0-0, N-K4; 10 N-Q4, N-N3; 11 Q-B2, N-K1; 12 P-B4, B-B3; 13 B-K3, B-Q2; 14 B-B2, N-K2; 15 QR-K1, BxN; 16 BxB, P-B4; 17 PxPep, BxP; 18 P-K4, Q-Q2; 19 N-Q5, NxN; 20 PxN, B-N4; 21 R-B3, N-B2; 22 R-B3, N-R3; 23 R/3-K3, KR-K1; 24 R-K6, N-B2; 25 QxP!, NxR; 26 PxN, Q-K2; 27 QxB, QR-B1; 28 QxP, R-B2; 29 Q-K4, KR-QB1; 30 B-QB3, R-B5; 31 Q-Q3, P-QR4; 32 R-Q1, Q-R2ch; 33 K-R1, R/5-B2; 34 QxP, P-R4; 35 B-K4, R-K1; 36 Q-K5, R-B4; 37 R-Q5, RxR; 38 BxR, R-K2; 39 QxPch, RxQ; 40 P-K7ch, K-R2; 41 B-K4ch, Resigns

Modern pro football players say that a tie is like kissing your sister—certainly Steinitz, who had spent the better part of his life

asserting his superiority to the rest of the world's chessplayers, was of no mind to admit Tchigorin as an equal; Tchigorin, to whom indecisive results were anathema anyway, had little to gain by a tie. Consequently, it was agreed that the match should continue until one player should score ten wins. The twenty-first game was drawn, and then Steinitz won the next two games, and the match by 10-8 with 5 draws.

Steinitz had once again defeated Tchigorin, but against what he must have considered his true opponent, the Spirit of Gambit Play, he had, in this second encounter, failed miserably. Not only had Tchigorin scored 4-1 and 3 draws with the Evans Gambit, he had won three games out of four with Black in the 'Two Knights' Defense, another opening in which material is sacrificed, in which Steinitz had tried out a number of original ideas. It was as White in the Ruy Lopez, in which he scored 3-0 and 1 draw, and in the queen's-pawn openings, in which he won three out of three, that Steinitz triumphed.

After the Tchigorin match, in which the closeness of the score indicated both the challenger's growing strength and his own gradual decline, Steinitz set to work on the second volume of his *Modern Chess Instructor*, supporting himself by journalism and by exhibitions. In 1892 he was fifty-six years old and crippled by gout, but still manifested a fierce energy and determination that must have filled his contemporaries with awe. Late in 1893 he gave a simultaneous exhibition in Montreal, where one of his opponents was the sixteen-year-old Frank J. Marshall. Marshall has left us a memorable word-picture of him on that occasion:

I can see Steinitz now as he appeared to me then—a short, heavy-set bearded man with a large head. As he walked round the tables I noticed that he limped. Near-sighted, he leaned over each board and peered at the pieces. Each time he came to my board, he gave me an encouraging smile. One of the greatest waiting players of all time, he had such a fierce desire to win, that even in simultaneous exhibitions he hated to draw games. [Frank Marshall, *My Fifty Years of Chess*]

It was while Steinitz was engaged against Tchigorin and Gunsberg that two new names began to be heard in the world of chess:

Siegbert Tarrasch and Emanuel Lasker. Both Germans, Tarrasch, who was born in 1862, was six years the elder, and had won his national master's title as early as 1884; in 1889 he scored his first international success at a congress in his home town of Breslau, the same event at which Lasker, playing in a lower section, won his master's title. There followed for Tarrasch a whole string of first prizes: at Manchester in 1890, Dresden in 1892, and Leipzig in 1894. By 1894 he was clearly the strongest tournament player in the world.

Lasker, on the other hand, had by 1894 managed only some relatively minor successes; when in 1892 he challenged Tarrasch to a match, the English journalist Samuel Hoffer, through whom the challenge was communicated, found Tarrasch's reply so unsatisfactory that he dared not repeat it to Lasker verbatim. And yet when, in March 1894, Steinitz sat down to face a new aspirant to the world title, it was Lasker and not Tarrasch who was sitting opposite.

The explanation for such a state of affairs is very simple, and may be expressed in one word: money. Lasker had contrived somehow to find backing for a challenge to Steinitz; in 1893 he had traveled to America, and had so impressed various people here that a prize fund of \$3000 for a match to be played in New York, Philadelphia, and Montreal was eventually collected.

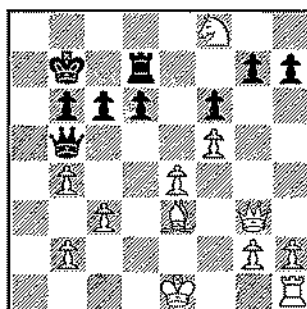
Accordingly, on March 15, 1894, play began in New York. Although at the age of twenty-six Lasker was thirty-two years younger than Steinitz (the largest age discrepancy ever in the history of world championship play) and Steinitz was obviously in bad health—he was now so hobbled by gout that he needed to make his way on crutches—it was widely supposed that the champion would retain his title. The time limit was 15 moves an hour, and the first player to win ten games would be the victor.

The first three games were all with the Ruy Lopez. Lasker won the first, with White, in 60 moves, Steinitz the second, against the Berlin Defense, in 42. In the third, Steinitz again resorted to the defense that has come to bear his name:

White: Lasker    Black: Steinitz 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3;  
3 B-N5, P-Q3 (*The characteristic move of the Steinitz Defense,*

but a more flexible way is 3 . . . N-B3 and only after White commits his king with 4 0-0, then 4 . . . P-Q3—see the next note. Steinitz's typically constricted defense was fairly popular through the middle '20's—there are examples of it in the Lasker-Capablanca match of 1921—but went out of fashion thereafter and did not appear again in world championship competition until Bent Larsen tried it against Mikhail Tal in their semifinal Candidates' match in 1965: 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-B3; 4 0-0, P-Q3; 5 P-Q4, B-Q2; 6 N-B3, PxP; 7 NxP, B-K2; 8 P-QN3, NxN; 9 QxN, BxB; 10 NxB, N-Q2; 11 B-R3, P-QR3; 12 N-B3±.; 4 P-Q4, B-Q2; 5 N-B3, KN-K2 (On 5 . . . N-B3 there can follow 6 B-N5, B-K2; 7 Q-Q3! followed by [8] 0-0-0 with a very powerful position, but the text move is hardly better.); 6 B-QB4 (Threatening 7 N-KN5; in the seventh game Lasker tried 6 B-K3.), PxP; 7 NxP, NxN; 8 QxN, N-B3; 9 Q-K3, N-K4 (9 . . . B-K3!); 10 B-N3, B-K3; 11 P-B4, N-B5?; 12 Q-N3, N-N3; 13 B-K3, P-QB3; 14 P-B5, BxB; 15 RPxB, N-Q2; 16 B-B4, Q-B2; 17 P-N4, P-B3; 18 N-K2, N-K4; 19 N-Q4, Q-N3; 20 P-B3, 0-0-0; 21 N-K6, R-Q2; 22 B-K3, Q-N4! (The beginning of an ingenious sacrificial counterattack that nearly saves the game.); 23 RxP, P-QN3; 24 R-R8ch, K-N2; 25 RxB, RxR; 26 NxR,

STEINITZ



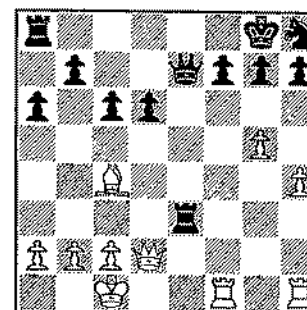
LASKER

Q-Q6!; 27 R-B1 (In an analysis by James Mason and W. H. K. Pollock it was shown that White could have taken the rook and escaped perpetual check, as follows: 27 NxR, Q-N8ch; 28 K-Q2!,

QxPch; 29 K-Q1, Q-N6ch; 30 K-K2, Q-B5ch; 31 K-B2, Q-R7ch; 32 K-B1, Q-B5ch; 33 K-K1, QxPch; 34 B-Q2, Q-R8ch; 35 K-K2++.), Q-B7; 28 B-Q2, R-K2 (According to Steinitz, Black should have tried 28 . . . N-B5; 29 Q-B4, R-Q1; 30 N-K6, R-QR1; 31 K-K2, R-R7 "with a powerful attack." The text is hopeless.); 29 N-K6, QxPch; 30 Q-K3, QxNP; 31 P-N3, R-K1; 32 Q-K2, Q-R6; 33 K-Q1, R-QR1; 34 R-B2, R-R7; 35 P-N5, P-B4; 36 NxNP, P-Q4; 37 K-B1, Q-Q6; 38 QxQ, NxQch; 39 K-N1, R-N7ch; 40 K-R1, RxP; 41 R-B3, P-B5; 42 N-K8, N-N5!; 43 R-N3, R-R6ch; 44 K-N1, R-N6ch; 45 K-B1, N-Q6ch; 46 RxN!, PxR; 47 NxP, RxP; 48 N-K8, K-B3; 49 P-B6, P-Q5; 50 N-N7, PxP; 51 BxP, R-N4? (51 . . . K-Q2!); 52 P-B7, Resigns

Steinitz came right back to win the fourth game, and the fifth and sixth were drawn. In the seventh, Lasker mismanaged the opening and lost two pawns, but counterattacked vigorously to reach the following position after 22 moves:

STEINITZ



LASKER

Lasker played 23 P-N6!, and when Steinitz replied 23 . . . P-Q4? (after 23 . . . PxP; 24 P-R5, P-KN4; 25 P-R6, PxP; 27 KRxP, R-K1 White has nothing) obtained some attacking chances; further weak play by Steinitz led to disaster: 24 PxRPch, KxP; 25 B-Q3ch, K-N1; 26 P-R5, R-K1; 27 P-R6; P-KN3; 28 P-R7ch, K-N2; 29 K-N1, Q-K4; 30 P-R3, P-QB4; 31 Q-B2, P-B5; 32 Q-R4, P-B3;

33 B-B5!, K-B2; 34 KR-N1, PxB; 35 Q-R5ch, K-K2; 36 R-N8, K-Q3; 37 RxB, Q-K3; 38 RxB, QxR/K1; 39 RxBPch, K-B4?; 40 Q-R6, R-K2; 41 Q-R2, Q-Q2?; 42 Q-N1ch, P-Q5; 43 Q-N5ch, Q-Q4; 44 R-B5, QxR; 45 QxQch, K-Q3; 46 Q-B6ch, Resigns. Lasker also won the eighth game and so, when the match moved on to Philadelphia, led by 4-2.

The ninth game, played April 14 at the Franklin Chess Club, was Lasker's best of the match:

**RUY LOPEZ**

**White: Lasker    Black: Steinitz**

1 P-K4	P-K4	3 B-N5	P-Q3
2 N-KB3	N-QB3	4 N-B3	

Obviously 4 P-Q4, to exert pressure against the enemy king's pawn, is sharper; the text permits Black a number of plausible replies.

4            P-QR3

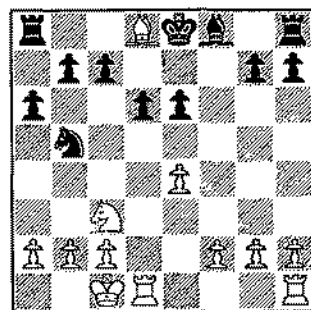
After 4 . . . N-B3 or 4 . . . B-Q2; 5 P-Q4 the game would have transposed into more usual channels; 4 . . . B-N5, however, was another short cut to equality, for example, 5 P-Q4, PxB; 6 QxP, BxN; 7 PxB, P-QR3; 8 BxNch, PxB; 9 Q-B4, Q-Q2=, Tylor-Sultan Khan, Hastings, 1932-33.

5 B-B4

Or 5 BxNch, PxB; 6 P-Q4, P-B3= when White's knight on QB3 blocks his QBP and so restricts his possibilities for play on the queen-side.

5	B-K3	8 NxP	NxN	11 BxQ	NxQ
6	BxB	PxB	9 QxN	N-K2	12 O-O-O
7	P-Q4	PxP	10 B-N5	N-B3!	

**STEINITZ**



**LASKER**

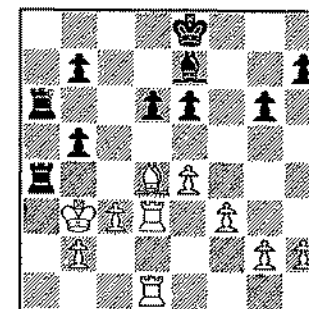
Simply 12 . . . RxB; 13 RxN, B-K2 would have led to an even game; the text move, on the other hand, saddles Black with a number of weaknesses and an arduous defensive task.

13 NxN    PxN            14 BxP    RxP

Or 14 . . . R-R3 (*threatening* 15 . . . K-Q2); 15 P-K5, P-Q4; 16 P-QR3, K-Q2, winning the king's pawn instead of the rook's pawn, but still remaining with a very difficult game.

15 B-N6	B-K2	18 K-N3	R/7-R5	21 R-Q3	K-K1
16 P-QB3	K-B2	19 P-B3	R/1-R3	22 KR-Q1	
17 K-B2	KR-R1	20 B-Q4	P-KN3		

**STEINITZ**



**LASKER**

22            P-K4

While this move obviously constitutes a major concession, it was impossible to avoid; if (according to analysis by Fred Reinfeld and Reuben Fine in their book *Dr. Lasker's Chess Career*) I: 22 . . . K-Q2; 23 B-B5, R-B3; 24 BxP, RxB; 25 RxRch, BxR; 26 P-K5, R-R3; 27 P-KB4, K-B2; 28 PxBch, RxP; 29 R-Q4!+-, The exchange of rooks would lose quickly.

II: 22 . . . R-B3; 23 B-B2, K-Q2; 24 B-N3, K-B2; 25 R-Q4, RxR; 26 RxR, R-B4; 27 K-N4+-.

23 B-K3	K-Q2	26 B-R3	P-N4	29 K-R5
24 B-B5!	R-R8	27 R-Q5	R-N3	
25 R/1-Q2	K-K3	28 K-N4	P-N5	

Lasker later preferred 29 PxP, R-K8; 30 K-R5, B-Q1; 31 RxP, Rx3ch; 32 K-N4, RxPch; 33 K-N3, but the text is simpler.

29            R-R3ch

On 29 . . . B-Q1, White has 30 RxP!

30 KxP	P-R4	34 K-N6	R-KN1	38 RxPch	K-B2
31 R-Q1	RxR	35 KxP	R-N7	39 K-Q5	B-B3
32 RxR	PxP	36 P-R4	R-R7		
33 PxP	R-R1	37 K-B6	BxP		

If 39 . . . R-Q7ch; 40 KxP!, B-N6ch; 41 P-B4, RxR; 42 BxR, P-R5; 43 B-B5, P-R6; 44 B-N1 and White wins.

40 R-Q7ch	K-N3	44 RxRch	PxR	48 P-N5	K-B5
41 K-K6	P-R5	45 B-B5	B-Q1	49 P-N6	Resigns
42 R-Q1	P-R6	46 P-N4	K-N4		
43 R-N1ch	R-N7	47 K-Q7	B-B3		

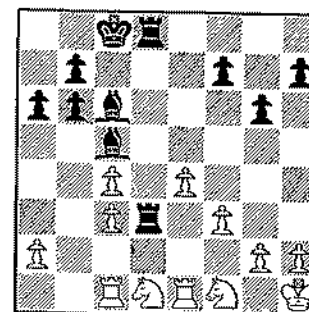
Lasker also won the tenth game, and the eleventh, so that when the match resumed at the Cosmopolitan Club in Montreal at the beginning of May, the score stood at 7-2. Everyone, including Lasker, doubtless expected that the affair would be over pretty quickly, but Steinitz, out of sheer cussedness his enemies must have thought, summoned the strength for a last desperate stand in defense of the title he had fought so hard to win. The twelfth game was a draw, but in the thirteenth, the old man played one of the finest games of his long career:

### Ruy Lopez

White: Lasker Black: Steinitz 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3 (This move, almost a reflex action with most modern players, appealed very little to Steinitz, who, after all, had invented one of the other possible defenses and might reasonably be expected to favor his own brainchild. In earlier games of this match, however, the Steinitz Defense had met with a rude reception.); 4 BxN (It was with the Exchange Variation that Lasker subsequently won some of the most important games of his life, including his famous victory over Capablanca in the St. Petersburg tournament of 1909. Recently Bobby Fischer has scored some notable successes with it, but by adopting a somewhat different scheme—see the next note.) . . . QPxB; 5 P-Q4 (The modern move is 5 0-0, and

after 5 . . . P-B3,—5 . . . B-KN5 is the alternative—6 P-Q4, PxP; 7 NxP, P-B4; 8 N-N3, QxQ; 9 RxQ, B-Q3; 10 N-R5!±), PxP 6 QxP, QxQ; 7 NxQ, P-QB4 (In the St. Petersburg game mentioned above, Capablanca tried 7 . . . B-Q3, and play continued 8 N-QB3, N-K2; 9 0-0, 0-0; 10 P-B4, R-K1; 11 P-B5?!); 8 N-K2, B-Q2; 9 QN-B3 (In the first game of his 1908 match against Tarasch, Lasker played 9 P-QN3 here, but after 9 . . . B-B3; 10 P-KB3, B-K2; 11 B-N2, B-B3; 12 BxB, NxR; 13 N-Q2, 0-0-0; 14 0-0-0, R-Q2; 15 N-KB4, R-K1; 16 N-B4, P-QN3 had little if any advantage.) 0-0-0; 10 B-B4, B-B3; 11 0-0, N-B3; 12 P-B3, B-K2; 13 N-N3, P-KN3; 14 KR-K1 (KR-Q1!), N-Q2; 15 N-Q1, N-N3; 16 N-B1, R-Q2; 17 B-K3, KR-Q1±; 18 P-QN3, P-B5!; 19 BxN, PxR; 20 PxP, B-N5!; 21 P-B3, B-B4ch; 22 K-R1, R-Q6; 23 R-B1,

STEINITZ



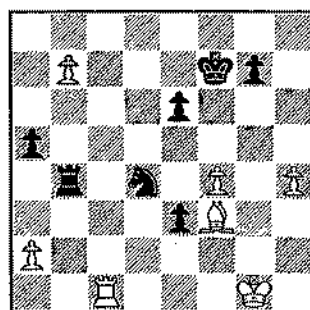
LASKER

P-QR4 (23 . . . B-R6!; 24 N-KB2, R-Q7; 25 NxR, RxN; 26 N-R3, BxR; 27 RxR, P-B3—+.); 24 N/Q-K3, P-B4; 25 PxP (N-Q5!), PxP; 26 P-KR3 (26 NxP, RxKBP!!; 27 N/5-N3, R-B7 or 27 N-K7ch, BxN; 28 PxR, BxPch; 29 K-N1, B-B4ch; 30 N-K3, R-Q7—+.), R-N1; 27 N-Q5, BxN; 28 PxR, RxQP; 29 QR-Q1? (P-N4!), RxR; 30 RxR, P-B5!; 31 K-R2, R-K1; 32 P-QR4, K-B2; 33 P-R4, K-B3; 34 P-B4, B-N5; 35 K-R3, R-K8; 36 RxR, BxR; 37 K-N4, K-B4; 38 KxP, KxP; 39 K-K4, BxP; 40 P-N3, B-Q1; 41 N-K3ch, K-N5; 42 K-Q3, KxP; 43 K-B2, K-N4; 44 P-B4, K-

B4; 45 P-B5, K-Q3; 46 P-N4, P-N4; 47 N-Q1, K-K4; 48 N-B3, P-N5; 49 N-R4, K-Q5; 50 N-N2, P-N4; 51 K-N3, B-K2; 52 P-N5, P-R5ch; 53 NxP, PxNch; 54 KxP, K-K4; 55 K-N3, KxP; Resigns

Seemingly invigorated, Steinitz also won the fourteenth game in good style, and seemed on the verge of the most spectacular comeback in chess history. At this juncture the schedule called for a week's pause, which ought to have afforded the older man a much-needed rest. It was Lasker who benefited from the interruption, however, as he won the fifteenth game rather easily, and now led by 8-4. In the sixteenth, the opening and early middlegame went badly for Steinitz, but he fought back as tenaciously as ever, and after 36 moves the following critical position arose:

LASKER



STEINITZ

Here Steinitz played 37 K-N2? and lost after 37 . . . R-N7ch; 38 K-N3, RxNP; 39 BxR, N-K7ch; 40 K-B3, NxR; 41 KxP, NxP etc. But after 37 R-B7ch, K-B3; 38 B-K4, N-K7ch!; 39 K-N2, NxPch; 40 K-B3, P-K7; 41 R-B1, N-Q4 (41 . . . K-K4?; 42 R-QN1!); 42 BxN, PxB; 43 KxP, RxP; 44 R-B5, R-N7ch; 45 K-K3, RxP; 46 RxQP White should be able to draw.

To have given away half a point at such a time must have been immeasurably disheartening, but still the old man refused to give up, and came back to win the seventeenth game. It was to be his

last hurrah, however, and, on May 26, 1894, after 52 moves of the eighteenth game, William Steinitz resigned the match and the chess championship of the world to Emanuel Lasker, after a reign of nine years (dating from his victory over Zukertort.) Twenty-seven years were to pass before the title changed hands again.



### 3

## Emanuel Lasker

THE new champion, Emanuel Lasker, was born December 24, 1868, in the village of Berlinchen, in Brandenburg, the son of the cantor of the local synagogue. He learned chess, and much else, from his older brother Berthold, himself a player of master strength who, when he settled in Berlin to study medicine, supported himself for a time by playing for small stakes at a tearoom in the city. Since young Emanuel adored Berthold, and was also destined by his proud parents for an academic career, he was sent off at the age of eleven to live with his brother. He too, however, spent much of his time in the tearoom, and eventually his father felt it wise to remove him from temptation, and sent him to school in the town of Landsburg, where he exhibited a remarkable talent for mathematics.

When he returned to Berlin to attend the university, he also returned to the tearoom, and spent the next few years living in the traditional manner of students, from hand to mouth. In 1888 he entered his first tournament, an annual affair sponsored by the fashionable Café Kaiserhof, and to his own surprise as much as anybody else's he won every game and a substantial cash prize. Coming to him as it did after years of penury, the prize must have made a profound impression on young Lasker; at any rate he decided to abandon his university studies temporarily and try for more of them. He accordingly traveled to Breslau, where in 1889 the German Chess Federation was holding its biannual Congress,

which included a *Hauptturnier* (candidates' tournament), the winner to obtain the coveted Master's title.

Lasker did win the *Hauptturnier* and with it the Master's title, after a difficult struggle, but his triumph was of course overshadowed by Tarrasch's first great victory in the international tournament that was the premier event of the Congress. He went on to a small international tournament in Amsterdam, where he finished second, and then to some even smaller events in Germany and Austria. Afterwards, like Steinitz before him, he decided to try his luck in England and, after an uninterrupted string of minor successes there, in the United States. It was from this distant refuge that he attempted to arrange a match against Tarrasch, who had in the meantime won two more top-class tournaments and was widely regarded in Europe as the next world champion. The hauteur with which Tarrasch spurned Lasker's challenge was to have repercussions some years later, when Lasker wore the crown and it was Tarrasch's turn to seek a match.

Lasker responded to Tarrasch's refusal with delightful audacity: he challenged instead the world champion, Steinitz. That both were at that time in America must have had something to do with it, but the match was arranged, and Lasker won.

Emanuel Lasker played tournament chess for roughly forty-eight years, most of them in top-flight competition at a time when great strides were being made in the development of the modern game, and yet the commentators are unanimous in agreement that "he contributed little or nothing to the theory of the game" (So William Winter in *Kings of Chess*). Dr. Euwe includes him, along with Tarrasch, Pillsbury, Marshall and Capablanca, in a chapter of his book *The Development of Chess Style* entitled "Technique and Routine," the theme of which is that the masters who followed Steinitz "generally sought only for perfect application of principles already known," and did not attempt to articulate any new ones. This is true of course only if one holds that the principles of chess deal exclusively with the relationships of the pieces on the chessboard to one another, and have nothing to say about the game as it is actually played—by two fallible human beings with imperfect understanding and strictly limited time at their disposal. Steinitz, and to a lesser extent his leading disciple Tarrasch, took the more

abstract view, and we have already seen how Steinitz would saddle himself with the most appalling practical difficulties through over-zealous adherence to theoretical principles. Lasker, on the other hand, was the most practical player who ever lived, and demonstrated over and over in his games how to play not only good chess but winning chess.

This is not simply another way to repeat the well-known assertion that Steinitz played the board and Lasker the man. Obviously Lasker played the board as much as anybody: the most fundamental of his talents was a remarkable tactical skill and a grasp of the possibilities inherent in a given position that amazed his contemporaries. The Viennese master Rudolf Spielmann has written of him:

His eyes, his thoughts are everywhere. I speak from experience, for I have frequently tried to analyze with him. The result was really discouraging for me; no sooner had I hit on a good idea or a pretty combination, than Lasker waved it aside; for he had long ago already discarded it in his thoughts! [Quoted by numerous authorities, e.g. Fred Reinfeld in *The Human Side of Chess*]

But Lasker, with his overwhelmingly practical mind, employed his renowned tactical abilities only as much as was necessary to solve the problem at hand; in chess, anyway, what he did not need to know, he did not want to know. Witness William Winter:

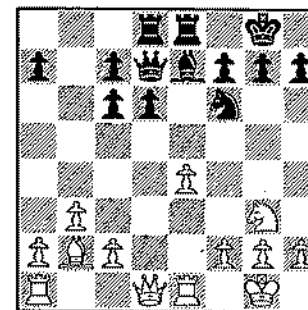
His attitude to chess is well exemplified by a game which I played against him in the Nottingham International Tournament of 1936. After over half an hour's thought I placed a Knight on a square on which it could be taken by a pawn. Lasker replied instantaneously with a quiet defensive move and I soon found that all I had gained by my "brilliancy" was the loss of valuable thinking time.

After the game was over a spectator asked him what would have happened had he taken the Knight. "I do not know," he replied. "I was playing a strong master and if a strong master thinks for half an hour and then plays a piece where I can

take it, I think that it will not be healthy for me to take it, and I let it alone." [William Winter, *Kings of Chess*]

Of course Lasker also played the man more than anyone ever had before him; in the early days his grasp of chess psychology was unrivaled, and he employed it to good advantage against opponents like Tarrasch who had readily exploitable psychological weaknesses. Many commentators, however, have found "psychological strategy" ubiquitous in Lasker's games, and have popularized the notion that he often deliberately made second-best moves in order to lure his adversary on to his own destruction. The following position, taken from the second game of his first (1908) match against Tarrasch, is often cited as a case in point:

LASKER



TARRASCH

Lasker, Black, played 14 . . . N-N5. Tarrasch replied with the powerful pseudo-sacrifice 15 BxP! (15 . . . KxB; 16 N-B5ch and 17 QxN), but after the "desperado" 15 . . . NxBP, played 16 KxN? when 16 Q-Q4! would have won, e. g. (after 16 Q-Q4) 16 . . . N-N5; 17 R-KB1, P-B3 (17 . . . Q-K3; 18 N-B5); 18 N-R5+— for the full text of the game see p. 59). Some critics have asserted that Lasker played 14 . . . N-N5 because he *knew* that Tarrasch, rather than play for an unclear, if winning, attack beginning with 16 Q-Q4, would instead go into some mythical "safe" endgame with a pawn ahead. Lasker's own note to 14 . . . N-N5 explains rather more plausibly what was on his mind when he played the

move: "This is unsatisfactory," he writes, "but Black has none better."

It is probably no exaggeration to assert that Lasker never deliberately played a "second-best" move in his life, but always played the move that he thought offered the best practical chance of success, even if playing it meant that he would need to incur considerable risk. Chess, to Lasker, was above all a struggle, and he would often deliberately make things as difficult as possible for both sides, confident that he would be able to manage the ensuing difficulties better than his opponent. In this he has been followed by some of the most successful players of the '60's and '70's, most notably Mikhail Tal and Bobby Fischer. Lasker's "principle" that in chess, as in life, the fittest survive is his most important contribution to the theory of the game.

After he had defeated Steinitz and won the world championship, Lasker still needed to prove, especially to Tarrasch and his admirers, that he was the best player in the world. It was doubtless with that thought in mind that, in the summer of 1895, he entered the grand tournament at Hastings; thus his third place finish, behind the twenty-two-year-old American Harry Nelson Pillsbury, who scored perhaps the most surprising dark-horse victory in the history of chess, and the redoubtable Tchigorin could hardly have satisfied him. He did, however, finish ahead of both Tarrasch, who was fourth, and Steinitz, who was fifth.

Far more satisfactory was the result of the tournament at St. Petersburg, held in the winter of 1895-96, to which the five top finishers at Hastings were invited. Tarrasch, who was a doctor of medicine and needed to return to his practice, declined, but Pillsbury, Tchigorin, Lasker, and Steinitz braved the Russian winter to play what was later to be called a "match-tournament"; that is, each contestant played a small match—in this event five games—against each of the others with the scores added together to determine the winner of the tournament. Lasker finished first with 11½, followed by Steinitz with 9½, Pillsbury with 8, and Tchigorin with 7.

If Lasker took the outcome of this event to prove that he truly deserved to be world champion, Steinitz took it to prove that he was still the most logical challenger; the people who had put up

the money for the tournament itself readily agreed, and a return match between the two was speedily arranged, to begin in November 1896. The outcome of the Nuremberg tournament, held in July and August of 1896, in which Lasker was again first and Steinitz sixth, indicated more accurately the relative strengths of the two at the beginning of the second match.

One is of two minds about the second Lasker-Steinitz match: on the one hand it is tempting to assert that it should never have been played at all. Steinitz was then over sixty years old, in poor health physically, and had driven himself close to nervous collapse through trying to regain the prestige he had lost in losing the title. On the other, had Lasker denied him the opportunity to regain the crown he had worn for so long, it would have been considered, and rightly so, the rankest injustice. Perhaps it is sensible, therefore, to look on the second match as one of those sad things that, for better or worse, just had to happen.

The match began on November 7, and Lasker won the first four games. The fifth was drawn, Lasker won the sixth, and, after three draws, won two more. The eleventh game was another draw and then, with the score 7-0 against him, Steinitz won two in a row. The fourteenth game was a draw, the fifteenth and sixteenth wins for Lasker. The seventeenth game, the last old William Steinitz was ever to contest for the title that meant so much to him, is noteworthy if only because it shows him putting up the same kind of heroic resistance to the inevitable that characterized so much of his chess career and of his life:

### *Queen's Gambit Declined*

*White:* Steinitz *Black:* Lasker 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, N-KB3; 4 B-N5, B-K2; 5 P-K3, 0-0; 6 Q-N3, QN-Q2; 7 N-B3, P-B3; 8 B-Q3, PxP; 9 BxP, P-N4; 10 B-K2, P-QR3; 11 P-QR4, P-N5; 12 N-QN1, P-B4; 13 QN-Q2, B-N2; 14 P-R5, PxP; 15 PxP, N-Q4; 16 B-K3, B-Q3; 17 N-B4, B-B2; 18 B-N5, P-B3; 19 B-Q2, Q-K2; 20 N-K3, QR-N1; 21 B-B4, KR-Q1; 22 0-0, N-B1; 23 KR-K1, Q-B2; 24 N-B1, K-R1; 25 N-N3, BxN; 26 RPxB,

N-KN3; 27 Q-Q3, R-Q3; 28 R-K2, B-B1; 29 N-K1, Q-Q2; 30 N-B2, P-K4; 31 QR-K1, B-N2; 32 Q-N3, B-B3; 33 NxP, NxN; 34 BxN, RxP; 35 Q-QB3, BxP; 36 KxB, Q-B3ch; 37 R-K4, RxR; 38 RxR, QxRch; 39 K-N1, Q-N2; 40 B-B5, R-Q1; 41 B-K2, P-K5; 42 P-QN4, N-K4; 43 B-K3, N-Q6; 44 B-N6, R-QB1; 45 Q-Q4, P-R3; 46 K-R2, N-K4; 47 Q-Q1, R-B6; 48 Q-Q6, N-B6ch; 49 K-N2, Q-KB2; 50 P-N4, Q-R7; 51 B-B1, N-R5ch; 52 K-N1, R-B8; 53 B-K3, N-B6ch; 54 K-N2, RxB; 55 QxRP (55 KxR leads to mate in five.), . . . R-N8ch; 56 K-R3, Q-Q4; 57 Q-B8ch, K-R2; 58 P-R6, R-R8ch; 59 K-N2, N-R5ch; Resigns (*The finish is pretty: if 60 KxR, then 60 . . . Q-Q8ch; 61 K-R2, Q-B6; 62 Q-B5ch, NxQ; 63 PxN, P-R4 followed by . . . P-R5-6 and mate.*).

Four weeks afterward, Steinitz was admitted to a psychiatric clinic in Moscow, the victim of nervous collapse. After his recovery he returned to America, making only one more trip to Europe to play chess. (His last tournament was at London in 1899, where for the first time in his long career he failed to win a prize.) Surely he ought to have retired from competition long before, but he was still wholly dependent on chess for a precarious livelihood. One story, perhaps apocryphal but with a ring of truth, has one of his admirers asking him why he didn't retire, as he had won enough glory in his lifetime for any man. "The glory I can spare," Steinitz is said to have replied, "but I need the prize money." Back in New York after his failure in London, he suffered a complete mental breakdown and was committed to the madhouse on Ward's Island, where, on August 12, 1900, he died.

Whereas Steinitz had devoted his whole life to chess, the new champion had many and varied interests, and it was to devote his time to one of these—mathematics—that he in effect retired for the next seven years, playing in only two tournaments, in London, 1899, and Paris, 1900, winning both. Lasker's biographer (Jacques Hannak, author of *Emanuel Lasker: The Life of a Chess Master*) has attempted to portray him as a multi-faceted genius who sometimes bitterly resented the time he needed to take from his mathematical and philosophical speculations in order to play chess—chess, after all, was how he earned his daily bread. He was indeed a mathematician of high abilities, whose thoughts on the subject were treated with respect by those of his friends, among them

Albert Einstein, with whom he discussed them (his philosophical work, on the other hand, mostly manifested in a ponderous tome called *Die Philosophie des Unvollendbar*—"of the Unattainable"—has gone largely ignored), but it was only in chess that he achieved greatness.

At any rate, the fruit of his mathematical studies in those years was a doctorate, bestowed on him by Erlangen University in 1902, with the net result that by 1903 he was back in the United States editing a chess magazine. In 1904 he returned to tournament competition, in the grand event held in the summer of that year at the then popular resort town of Cambridge Springs, Pennsylvania, where he finished third. The winner of that tournament, somewhat unexpectedly, was Frank J. Marshall.

Frank James Marshall was born on August 10, 1877, in New York City. About the turn of the century he became America's most successful international player, and was to remain so for thirty years. In 1909 he defeated Jackson W. Showalter in a match for the United States Championship, a title he was to retain until he renounced it voluntarily in 1936. The author of several well-loved brilliancies and winner of not a few important tournaments, he was certainly to be regarded as a formidable opponent for anybody, including the world champion. And yet when, largely in consequence of Marshall's fine victory at Cambridge Springs, a match between them was arranged and played, Lasker won by 8-0, with 7 draws.

The result, although it could not have been wholly unexpected, since Tarrasch had defeated Marshall a couple of years earlier by an almost equally embarrassing margin (+8-1=8), must have been a terrible disappointment to Marshall's many fans—Marshall himself seems to have taken it pretty much in stride. Since he later lost a match to young Capablanca by 8-1 (=14) the phenomenon of his spectacular unsuccess is worth puzzling over, especially for the light it may shed on similar one-sided results (Bobby Fischer's 6-0 wins over Mark Taimanov and Bent Larsen in the 1971 Candidates' matches, for example). Marshall himself has written:

Speaking of matches, I had several unfortunate results about this time. Everyone knows that I have always done better in tournaments than in match play, and no wonder: I've always

had a passion for new faces, new places, novelties in opening play, slashing attack and counterattack. The grim business of wearing down your opponent has never appealed to me very much. [Frank Marshall, *My Fifty Years of Chess*]

Match and tournament play are very different in many ways, some obvious, some subtle. In a tournament, you may lose badly one day but you have a new opponent the next, and you can feel to some extent that you are starting all over with him. In a match, the fellow who beat you yesterday is facing you again today, and it takes an act of will to convince yourself that you can turn around and beat him. Thus, the effects of a defeat may be cumulative, and two or three of them at the beginning of a match may precipitate a disaster. Surely Lasker was a better player than Marshall, but not nearly so much better as the score would indicate. It is worth adding *à propos* of Marshall's comment that he did win several matches against players obviously weaker than himself.

Lasker of course incurred a good deal of criticism for choosing to play Marshall at all, when other, worthier challengers were available. For instance he might have taken on the Hungarian Geza Maroczy, who had won three major tournaments in succession, at Monte Carlo, 1904, Ostend, 1905, and Barmen, 1905. And of course there was always Tarrasch to be considered.

The match against Tarrasch had almost come off in 1904; reportedly a provisional agreement had been reached, and then fallen through. Negotiations were accordingly begun with Maroczy, and tentative articles for a match against him were published in *Lasker's Chess Magazine* in 1905. But that match also failed to take place, ostensibly because Maroczy withdrew at the last moment. That left Marshall, and a match relatively easy to arrange because it could be played in the States, where the American's genial personality assured many sponsors. If it was in Lasker's mind to better Tarrasch's score against the same opponent, he certainly succeeded.

But the match against Tarrasch was all but inevitable, and it finally took place in the two German cities of Munich and Düsseldorf in August and September of 1908, but not before protracted and mostly acrimonious negotiations. The hostility between the two was intense, and dated back to the time when Tarrasch had

spurned Lasker's challenge in 1894, but there were other points of difference as well. Money was one: Tarrasch had a thriving medical practice, and could afford to play for nothing, if necessary, but Lasker was a professional, and demanded satisfactory financial arrangements before he would risk his title. Lasker himself has left us a rather idyllic account of the talks that finally led up to the long-awaited match:

On June 4, 1908, I visited Coburg, a small city in which one forgets that cities are built of stone, so much greater is the impression of the gardens and trees, its river and green hills over its houses. The next day I met with Dr. Gebhardt, Herr Schenzel, Secretary of the German Chess Association, and Herr Teller, to discuss the situation of the Tarrasch match. I had explained my view by letter. The discussion lasted two hours and a half, and was ended up by my signing a rough copy of the agreement.

Berlin, July 12. The match is eight games up, draws not counting. The winner has a prize of 4,000 marks, the loser of 2,500 marks, and my compensation for the honoraries lost by my compliance with the desire of the German Chess Association to play where they choose, thus sacrificing all entrance moneys, is 7,500 marks. [Quoted in Hannak's *Emanuel Lasker: The Life of a Chess Master*]

As a fleeting glimpse of the poetical side of Lasker's nature this passage is less valuable than as an indication of the way title matches were arranged in the good old days, before the inception of the International Chess Federation. It also amply demonstrates how difficult it is from reading contemporary accounts to determine what was really going on—exactly what that last sentence means is anybody's guess.

Dr. Siegbert Tarrasch, forty-six years old at the time of the match, is in some ways rather an unappealing personality, at least to modern eyes. Certainly he made a pleasant enough impression on most contemporaries; the editor of the Hastings 1895 tournament book describes him as "a man of the highest educational attainments. Visitors to the Congress will remember him as a neat, well dressed gentleman of very engaging manners, and always with

a fresh flower in his button hole." It is perhaps this very punctiliousness of dress and manner, as well as his obvious pomposity and sometimes ill-concealed arrogance, that makes him seem to personify the civilian backbone to the Prussian military establishment, and all that that implies. Yet his love of chess, and his devotion to it, is charming and admirable. "Chess," he once wrote, "like love, like music, has the power to make men happy," and his contributions to the game, both as a player and as a writer, are such that he may be said to have given to chess as much as he got out of it, however one measures such things.

Of his weaknesses, as a player and as a man, Lasker the psychologist was of course well aware; on the eve of the match he wrote of his prospective adversary:

Dr. Tarrasch is a thinker, fond of deep and complex speculation, but . . . he lacks the passion that whips the blood when great things are to be won by resolute self-confidence and daring. [Quoted in Reinfeld's, *The Human Side of Chess*]

Tarrasch's views on Lasker are unrecorded, but probably he found the metaphor of passion whipping the blood a trifle vulgar, to say the least. An attempted reconciliation between them just before the beginning of the first game came to naught when, according to Lasker's biographer, Tarrasch, declining to shake hands, "made a stiff little bow and exclaimed: 'To you, Herr Lasker, I have only three words to say: Check and Mate!'" (Hannak) In such an atmosphere, then, the match began.

Lasker had White in the first game, and played the Exchange Variation of the Ruy Lopez—for the opening moves, see the note to the ninth move of the Lasker-Steinitz game on p. 44. Lasker got the better of the opening, but Tarrasch defended well, and had almost succeeded in equalizing, when he committed a serious error and allowed Lasker to win the ending. The second game, from the challenger's point of view, was even worse:

### Ruy Lopez

White: Tarrasch Black: Lasker 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-B3; 4 0-0, P-Q3; 5 P-Q4, B-Q2; 6 N-B3, B-K2; 7

R-K1, PxP (7 . . . 0-0? leads to the so-called Tarrasch trap: 8 BxN, BxB; 9 PxP, PxP; 10 QxQ, QRxQ; 11 NxP, BxP; 12 NxB, NxN; 13 N-Q3, P-KB4; 14 P-KB3, B-B4ch; 15 NxB, NxN; 16 B-N5 and 17 B-K7, winning the exchange!); 8 NxP, 0-0; 9 NxN (Both 9 BxN and 9 B-B1 are more usual; the text was a favorite of Tarrasch, as Lasker must have known very well.), BxN (9 . . . PxN!; 10 B-Q3, R-K1); 10 BxB, PxB; 11 N-K2, Q-Q2? (Of course not 11 . . . NxP? because of 12 N-Q4, P-Q4; 13 NxP, Q-Q3; 14 NxBch, QxN; 15 P-KB3++, but 11 . . . P-Q4; 12 P-K5, N-K5; 13 N-Q4, Q-Q2 or 11 . . . R-K1; 12 N-Q4, P-B4; 13 N-B5, N-Q2; 14 Q-N4, B-B3, though hardly perfect, are better than the text.); 12 N-N3, KR-K1 (The Black rooks, according to one annotator, belong on Q1—to enforce a subsequent . . . P-Q4—and QN1, which is right, so far as it goes, but his game is already seriously compromised.); 13 P-N3, QR-Q1; 14 B-N2, N-N5 (This position is discussed at length on p. 51.); 15 BxP, NxBP; 16 KxN?, KxB; 17 N-B5ch, K-R1; 18 Q-Q4ch, P-B3; 19 QxRP (White is now a pawn ahead, but Black's command of the dark squares and attacking chances against the enemy king are obvious compensations.), B-B1; 20 Q-Q4, R-K4; 21 QR-Q1 (This move has been severely criticized, but there is nothing wrong with it, and certainly nothing that is obviously better.), QR-K1; 22 Q-B3, Q-B2; 23 N-N3, B-R3; 24 Q-B3, P-Q4; 25 PxP, B-K6ch; 26 K-B1, PxP; 27 R-Q3? (27 N-B5!), Q-K3—+; 28 R-K2, P-KB4; 29 R-Q1, P-B5; 30 N-R1, P-Q5; 31 N-B2, Q-QR3; 32 N-Q3, R-KN4; 33 R-R1, Q-R3; 34 K-K1, QxP; 35 K-Q1, Q-N8ch; 36 N-K1, R/4-K4; 37 Q-B6, R/4-K3; 38 QxP, R/1-K2; 39 Q-Q8ch, K-N2; 40 P-R4, P-B6; 41 PxP, B-N4; Resigns

Two games down right off the bat, Tarrasch came back to play the third game in his best style:

### RUY LOPEZ

White: Lasker Black: Tarrasch

1 P-K4	P-K4	4 B-R4	N-B3	7 B-N3	P-Q3
2 N-KB3	N-QB3	5 0-0	B-K2	8 P-B3	N-QR4
3 B-N5	P-QR3	6 R-K1	P-QN4		

The modern way is 8 . . . 0-0, and only after the customary 9 P-KR3, then 9 . . . N-QR4, etc. This game quickly transposes, however.

9 B-B2 P-B4 11 QN-Q2 N-B3 13 N-B1  
10 P-Q4 Q-B2 12 P-KR3 0-0

This pawn sacrifice was a favorite of Lasker's, who apparently thought it sound. The exchange 13 PxBP followed by the Steinitz maneuver of N-B1-K3-Q5 or B5 is still the most popular scheme here, although recently the blockading move 13 P-Q5 has made a slight comeback, e. g.: 13 P-Q5, N-Q1; 14 P-QR4, R-N1; 15 P-QN4, P-B5; 16 N-B1, N-K1; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 N/3-R2±, Geller-Smyslov, Interzonal, Palma de Mallorca, 1970.

13 BPxP 14 PxP NxQP

It is still uncertain whether 14 . . . PxP is better; Black might find occasion to plant his knight on K4. It is likely that either move should be sufficient to give Black the better game.

15 NxN PxN 16 N-N3

In the fifth game, Lasker tried 16 B-N5 in this position, and play continued 16 . . . P-R3; 17 B-KR4, Q-N3; 18 Q-Q3, P-N4?; 19 B-KN3, B-K3; 20 QR-Q1, KR-B1?; 21 B-N1, N-Q2; 22 P-K5, N-B1; 23 Q-KB3, P-Q4; 24 Q-R5, K-N2; 25 P-B4, P-B4; 26 PxPepch, BxP; 27 PxP, PxP; 28 B-K5, P-Q6ch; 29 K-R1, N-N3; 30 QxP, B-B2; 31 N-N3, BxB; 32 RxB, R-R1; 33 BxP, R-QR2; 34 QR-K1, K-B1; 35 BxN, QxB; 36 Q-K3, R-B2; 37 N-B5, Q-QB3; 38 Q-N5, Resigns. Tarrasch was so shaken by the outcome of this game that he didn't answer 1 P-K4 with . . . P-K4 again for the rest of the match; obviously an emotional decision that did him a good deal of harm, since he scored only half a point out of three games with the French Defense.

16 N-Q2! 17 B-N3 Q-N3 18 N-B5

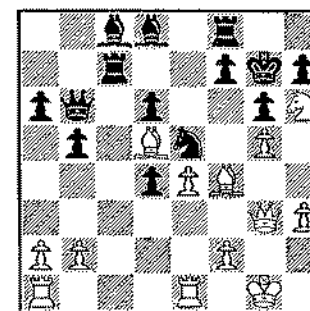
White can play to recover his pawn with 18 B-Q5, R-R2; 19 P-N3, P-N3 (if 19 . . . B-B3; 20 N-R5); 20 B-N2, B-B3; 21 Q-Q2 followed by 22 QR-Q1 but Lasker is still under the impression that he has attacking chances on the king-side.

18 B-B3 19 B-KB4 N-K4! 20 B-Q5

If 20 NxQP/4, then 20 . . . BxP!; 21 PxP, QxN; 22 QxQ, N-B6ch; 23 K-N2, NxQ; 24 BxP, NxP; 25 PxN, BxP with a clear pawn ahead.

20 R-R2 22 P-N4 P-N3 24 P-N5 B-Q1  
21 Q-N3 R-B2 23 N-R6ch K-N2 25 Q-N3

## TARRASCH



## LASKER

25 . . . P-B3!

Now Black seizes the initiative with the threat of 26 . . . PxP 27 BxP, BxB; 28 QxB, N-B6ch; White cannot reply 26 PxPch, RxP; 27 BxN, PxP; 28 N-N4 because after 28 . . . BxN; 29 PxP, P-Q6! Black can mount a decisive attack against White's KB2.

26 N-B5ch K-R1

Not 26 . . . PxN?; 27 PxPch, K-R1; 28 B-R6 and wins.

27 N-R4 PxP 29 QxB P-Q6 31 R-K3  
28 BxP BxB 30 K-R1 R-B7

To prevent 31 . . . QxP.

31 KRxP 34 Q-K7 RxRch 37 K-K1 Q-R4ch  
32 N-N2 P-Q7 35 KxR P-Q8(Q)ch 38 R-B3 BxP  
33 R-KN1 R-QB8 36 KxR Q-B6ch 39 QxP Q/4xRch!

The quickest way to win.

40 PxQ QxBPch 42 K-K3 Q-Q6ch  
41 K-K2 Q-B7ch 43 K-B4

Or 43 K-B2, Q-B7ch; 44 K-N3, QxNch; 45 K-B4, Q-B6ch; 46 K-N5, P-R3ch and mates next move.

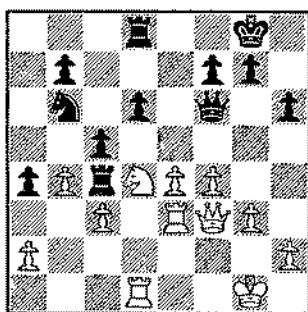
43 P-N4ch 44 KxP N-B2ch Resigns

In the fourth game, Lasker embarked on a fishy (some commentators say "psychological") maneuver with his queen's rook, but



Tarrasch went astray in the complications that followed. In the position below

LASKER



TARRASCH

he embarked on a faulty combination with 25 N-N5? (25 PxP!) and after 25 . . . PxP; 26 RxP, RxR; 27 P-K5, RxKBP! had a dead lost game—play continued 28 NPxR, Q-N3ch; 29 K-R1, Q-QN8ch; 30 K-N2, R-Q7ch etc., Black winning easily.

When he also lost the fifth game, the match was as good as over. Tarrasch did not win another game until the tenth, after which the score stood at 5-2, but Lasker squelched all hope of a rally by a quick win in the eleventh:

### French Defense

White: Lasker Black: Tarrasch 1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, N-KB3; 4 B-N5, B-N5; 5 PxP, QxP; 6 N-B3, P-B4; 7 BxN, PxB; 8 Q-Q2, BxN; 9 QxB, N-Q2; 10 R-Q1, KR-N1; 11 PxP, QxBP; 12 Q-Q2, Q-N3; 13 P-B3, P-QR3?; 14 Q-B2, P-B4; 15 P-KN3, N-B4; 16 B-N2, Q-B2; 17 Q-K2, P-QN4?; 18 O-O, B-N2; 19 P-B4, P-N5; 20 Q-Q2, R-N1; 21 Q-R6, BxN; 22 BxB, Q-K4; 23 KR-K1, QxP; 24 Q-B4, R-QB1; 25 Q-Q6, P-B3; 26 B-R5ch, R-N3; 27 BxRch, PxB; 28 RxPch, Resigns

The end came when, in the sixteenth game, Tarrasch made a crowning blunder in time pressure; the final score 8-3, with five

draws. The inevitable comment was "If Tarrasch had only played Lasker some years before, when he was in his prime . . .", but there is no indication that, at the age of forty-six, his play had weakened appreciably, and the inflexibility of approach that had proved costly on occasion was with him at the best of times. He had had his chance, and failed.

In 1909 Lasker played in the great international tournament at St. Petersburg, and tied for first with the young Pole Akiba Rubinstein, who defeated him in their individual game; talk of a match between them remained just talk, however, although in 1909-10 Lasker defended his title three times, in two matches against David Janowsky and one against Carl Schlechter.

Two more contrasting opponents and personalities than Janowsky and Schlechter could hardly be imagined. Janowsky, a Russian by birth who had taken up residence in Paris, was slight, quick, dapper and flamboyant, a habitual gambler both over the chess-board and in more conventional ways—for years he played in the annual Monte Carlo tournament and always returned his prize to the organizers in the casino at baccarat or roulette. His aggressive play of course made him a great favorite with the galleries. Schlechter, a native of Vienna, was also small and delicate, but extremely diffident in his life and cautious in his play. He was widely known throughout his career as a drawing master, usually content to split the point even with much weaker players, but very difficult to beat. There was something characteristically Viennese about him, something genteel, and his great store of old-world chivalry earned him the respect of all who knew him.

The principal difference between the two as prospective adversaries, however, was that Janowsky was much the weaker, and only got to play Lasker at all because he had a wealthy patron, Pierre Nardus, who unaccountably thought him a genius. When Lasker was in Paris on his way home from the St. Petersburg tournament, Nardus approached him and asked under what terms he would risk his title against Janowsky. Lasker (we can picture him looking the well-dressed fellow up and down while doing some quick calculations in his head) made an extravagant demand that, to his astonishment, probably, failed to put an end to the negotiations. Eventually it was agreed that they would play four

games as a kind of exhibition, with the idea that if Janowsky did well, the money would be forthcoming for a much longer encounter, this time for the title. To the considerable surprise of some ingenious souls, Janowsky did very well, winning two and losing two, for an even break with the champion. Then they played for the title, and Lasker won by 7-1, with 2 draws.

The Schlechter match was a very different proposition. Negotiations for that one had been proceeding slowly since shortly after the Tarrasch match, first for a meeting of thirty games in London, then, as the money was slow in coming, for fifteen. Finally it was decided that a ten-game match was the best that could be hoped for, to take place in Vienna and Berlin, and such a match accordingly began on January 7, 1910, in Schlechter's home city.

To play a match of only ten games with the world championship at stake was obviously strange, but with a player of Schlechter's pacific propensities involved, it would have been flatly stupid had Lasker not taken the elementary precaution to stipulate that, for the challenger to win the title, he would need to come out ahead by two points. Schlechter had little choice but to accept, even though he must have known very well the virtual impossibility of the task before him. Thus the long-awaited encounter took on the nature of an exhibition rather than a serious contest.

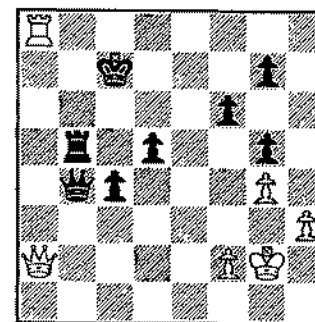
Not that the games are dull—far from it. They are for the most part splendid examples of the best efforts of two very strong players to beat each other's brains out, and just failing to achieve a decisive result by the narrowest of margins. The first four games were drawn, with Schlechter having the initiative most of the time, and the fifth game for a long while looked like just more of the same, only this time with Lasker on the offensive:

### Ruy Lopez

*White:* Schlechter *Black:* Lasker 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, N-B3; 4 O-O, P-Q3; 5 P-Q4, B-Q2; 6 N-B3, B-K2; 7 B-N5 (*Lasker had tried this unusual move in the Petersburg tournament as an alternative to the routine 7 R-K1.*), O-O (*This move has been unjustly criticized; after 7 . . . PxP; 8 NxP, O-O;*

9 KBxN, PxB; 10 Q-Q3 *White has a slight edge—Lasker-E. Cohn, St. Petersburg, 1909.*); 8 PxP (*On 8 KBxN, BxB; 9 PxP, PxP!; 10 QxQ, BxQ; 11 NxP, BxP; 12 BxN, BxB; 13 N-Q7, BxN; 14 NxR, BxQNP Black has obviously sufficient compensation for the exchange.*), QNxP; 9 BxB, KNxB; 10 BxB, NxNch; 11 QxN, QxB; 12 N-Q5, Q-Q1; 13 QR-Q1, R-K1; 14 KR-K1, N-N3; 15 Q-B3, NxN; 16 RxN (*After 16 PxN it would hardly be premature to split the point. White's subsequent attempts to make something of his slight advantage in space only compromise his own position, although probably not fatally.*), R-K3; 17 R-Q3, Q-K2; 18 R-N3, R-N3; 19 R/1-K3, R-K1; 20 P-KR3, K-B1; 21 RxR, RPxR; 22 Q-N4, P-QB3; 23 Q-R3, P-R3; 24 Q-N3, R-Q1; 25 P-QB4, R-Q2; 26 Q-Q1, Q-K4; 27 Q-N4, K-K1; 28 Q-K2, K-Q1; 29 Q-Q2, K-B2; 30 P-R3, R-K2; 31 P-QN4, P-QN4! (*Black is now slightly better, and begins to play for a win.*); 32 PxP, RPxP; 33 P-N3, P-N4; 34 K-N2, R-K1; 35 Q-Q1, P-B3; 36 Q-N3, Q-K3; 37 Q-Q1, R-KR1; 38 P-N4, Q-B5; 39 P-QR4 (*If White just sits back and waits, Black can slowly strengthen his position and break through on the queen-side by . . . P-QB4; this pawn sacrifice constitutes his best chance, and leads to very difficult play for both sides.*), QxNP; 40 PxP, QxNP; 41 R-QN3, Q-R3; 42 Q-Q4, R-K1; 43 R-N1, R-K4; 44 Q-N4, Q-N4; 45 Q-K1, Q-Q6; 46 R-N4, P-QB4; 47 R-R4, P-B5; 48 Q-R1, QxKPch; 49 K-R2, R-N4; 50 Q-R2 (*After 50 R-N7ch, K-Q1; 51 RxP, Q-K4ch Black has a winning endgame.*), 50 Q-K4ch; 51 K-N1, Q-K8ch; 52 K-R2, P-Q4; 53 R-R8, Q-N5; 54 K-N2,

LASKER



SCHLECHTER

Q-B4? (The losing blunder; after 54 . . . R-N2 it would still have been an open question whether White had sufficient play for two pawns.) 55 Q-R6, R-N1 (On 55 . . . R-N2, 56 Q-K6 wins; 55 . . . P-B6!?, giving up the queen, offered the best practical chance.); 56 R-R7ch, K-Q1 (QxR!); 57 RxP, Q-N3; 58 Q-R3, K-B1; 59 Q-B8ch and mate in two.

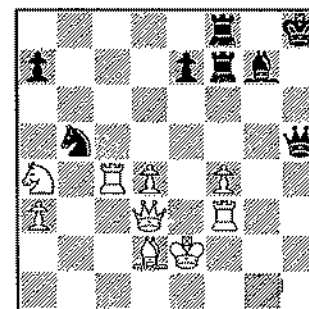
A point ahead, but with only five games to play, Schlechter quite naturally felt that he had nothing to lose by making an all out effort, and began to play like a *kamakazi* in quest of another win. Lasker, who knew fully well that the easiest way to lose a game of chess is to play for a draw, had little choice but to meet him head on. The result: four more draws!

It is only when one is aware of the circumstances under which it was played that the tenth game becomes even remotely intelligible:

### Slav Defense

White: Lasker Black: Schlechter 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 N-KB3, N-B3; 4 P-K3, P-KN3 (This has come to be known as the Schlechter Variation of the Slav Defense; it is of course more aggressive and riskier than five or six other lines he might have chosen.); 5 N-B3, B-N2; 6 B-Q3, O-O; 7 Q-B2, N-R3; 8 P-QR3, PxP; 9 BxBP, P-QN4; 10 B-Q3, P-N5; 11 N-QR4, PxP; 12 PxP, B-N2; 13 R-QN1, Q-B2; 14 N-K5, N-R4 (14 . . . N-Q2?; 15 RxB!); 15 P-KN4 (O-O!), BxN; 16 PxN, B-N2; 17 PxP, RPxP; 18 Q-B4, B-B1; 19 R-N1 (After 19 BxP, B-K3; 20 BxPch, BxB; 21 QxN, B-Q4 Black has a strong attack.), Q-R4ch; 20 B-Q2, Q-Q4; 21 R-QB1, B-N2; 22 Q-B2, Q-KR4; 23 BxP? (After 23 B-B4 White would have had a big edge.), QxP; 24 R-B1, PxB; 25 Q-N3ch, R-B2; 26 QxB, R/1-KB1!; 27 Q-N3 (27 QxN?, RxP; 28 RxR, RxR; 29 Q-B8ch, K-R2; 30 Q-N4, RxB; 31 Q-B3, R-KN7++), K-R1; 28 P-B4, P-N4!; 29 Q-Q3, PxP; 30 PxP, Q-R5ch; 31 K-K2, Q-R7ch; 32 R-B2, Q-R4ch; 33 R-B3, N-B2; 34 RxP, N-N4!; 35 R-B4,

SCHLECHTER



LASKER

RxP? (35 . . . R-Q1!; 36 B-K3, P-K4!—+); 36 BxR, RxB; 37 R-B8ch, B-B1; 38 K-B2!, Q-R7ch; 39 K-K1, Q-R8ch? (With 39 . . . Q-R5ch Black could still have had a draw: 40 K-Q2!, Q-R7ch; 41 K-K3, RxRch; 42 KxR, Q-R6ch and 43 . . . QxR=.); 40 R-B1, Q-R5ch; 41 K-Q2, RxR; 42 QxR, QxPch; 43 Q-Q3, Q-B7ch; 44 K-Q1, N-Q3 (White now wins slowly but surely with his material advantage.); 45 R-B5, B-R3; 46 R-Q5, K-N1; 47 N-B5, Q-N8ch; 48 K-B2, Q-B8ch; 49 K-N3, B-N2; 50 N-K6, Q-N7ch; 51 K-R4, K-B2; 52 NxN, QxN; 53 Q-QN3, K-K1; 54 Q-N8ch, K-B2; 55 QxP, Q-N5ch; 56 Q-Q4, Q-Q2ch; 57 K-N3, Q-N2ch; 58 K-R2, Q-B3; 59 Q-Q3, K-K3; 60 R-KN5, K-Q2; 61 R-K5, Q-N7ch; 62 R-K2, Q-N5; 63 R-Q2, Q-QR5; 64 Q-B5ch, K-B2; 65 Q-B2ch, QxQ; 66 RxQch, K-N3; 67 R-K2, N-B1; 68 K-N3, K-B3; 69 R-B2ch, K-N2; 70 K-N4, N-R2; 71 K-B5, Resigns

As if by way of demonstrating to the world that he had learned from the Schlechter match that the secret to success in chess was to choose one's opponents carefully, when, in November of 1910, Lasker again defended his title, his opponent was Janowsky; the result, Lasker by 8-0, with 3 draws.

Apart from the doings of the world champion, the few years immediately before the First World War were exciting ones in the world of chess. Although the international debut of twenty-year-old Alexander Alekhine of Russia at the tournament at Hamburg in

the summer of 1910 went largely unnoticed (he tied for seventh), not so the first European appearance at San Sebastian in 1911 of a twenty-three-year-old Cuban named José Raoul Capablanca.

Capablanca had already caused a mild sensation back in 1900 when, at the age of twelve, he won the championship of Cuba by winning a match against Juan Corzo. He had played no more serious chess, however, until while attending Columbia University in New York he had earned himself such a reputation in local circles that, in 1909, a match was arranged for him against Frank Marshall, Capablanca winning by the modest score of 8-1, with 14 draws.

On the strength of his showing against Marshall, Capablanca was invited to San Sebastian, despite the protests of some of the other participants, including Dr. Ossip Bernstein, that he had really done nothing to merit his inclusion—possibly there was some notion circulating that Marshall had thrown the match? In true Frank Merriwell fashion, young Capablanca beat Bernstein in the first round, in a game that subsequently won the brilliancy prize, and went on to win the tournament.

Before chess fans the world over could quite absorb this news, a sensation of like magnitude was produced when in 1912 Akiba Rubinstein won five major international tournaments in a row, at San Sebastian (for a short time an annual event), Pstyan, Breslau, Warsaw, and Vilna, a feat never accomplished before nor duplicated since. Rubinstein, a squat, somber figure from a small town in Russian Poland, had forsaken a career as a Talmudic scholar, had played in his first important tournament in 1907, and from there had gone on to success after success. The presence of two such youngsters as Capablanca and Rubinstein must have generated in the chess world the keenest excitement, at a time when, according to some trustworthy authorities, the rest of Western civilization was in the last throes of senile decay.

Either Capablanca or Rubinstein were of course logical candidates for a match against the champion, and it wasn't long before Capablanca requested the champion to set forth the conditions under which a match might be arranged. Lasker did so, but in their original form they were hardly of a kind that a serious challenger might accept. The match was to be played at a time and

place selected by the titleholder. The first player to score six wins would be the victor, with a maximum of thirty games. If at the end of thirty games the score were tied, or if either player was then leading by one point only, the match was to be a draw, and the champion retain his title. If the match did end in a tie, the stakes, the amount of which it was also to be the champion's prerogative to decide, were to be returned to the backers, the champion pay the challenger \$250 for every game he won and \$75 for every game he drew, but retain all publication rights to the games. There were other contestable points in Lasker's proposal: the challenger was to post \$2000 forfeit money (!) and the time limit was to be an unusually slow 12 moves an hour, but the recurring stipulation that victory was to be decided by a two-point margin was of course the most outrageous of the lot.

Capablanca, however, confident that he could best Lasker by two points if given time enough, objected principally to the thirty-game limit, and wrote in his reply that "the unfairness of this condition is obvious." Lasker responded with a statement to the press in which he declared Capablanca's words "offensive and insulting," and that brought negotiations to an end for the time being.

Late in 1912 Lasker opened negotiations with Rubinstein. Despite Rubinstein's prodigious string of victories, however, money to finance a meeting was not to be found; his self-effacing personality had won him few rich friends. Nevertheless it was agreed that they would contest a match sometime in 1914, should various chess clubs in Germany, Poland, and Russia contrive somehow to raise sufficient funds.

In April 1914, Lasker returned to competitive chess in a grand tournament at St. Petersburg; the field also included Capablanca and Rubinstein. The arrangements were somewhat unusual: first eleven players were to contest a single round-robin, then the top five scorers were to play a double round-robin final among themselves, their scores from the preliminaries to be carried over into the finals. After the first phase, Capablanca had 8 points, Lasker and Tarrasch 6½, and Alekhine and Marshall 6; Rubinstein had finished in a tie for sixth place and had not qualified for the finals. Lasker's feat in coming back to win the tournament, culminating in a last-round victory over Capablanca, provided one of the

greatest moments of chess history and not a little personal satisfaction to the aging champion, hardly diluted by the nominal reconciliation that had been effected between the two during the course of the event.

Despite his relative failure in the tournament, Capablanca scored one minor success at St. Petersburg: a set of rules he had drawn up to govern world championship play were approved in principle by the other competitors, including Lasker. Later in the year these rules were submitted to a vote of the Mannheim Congress, and again approved. They provided:

1. The champion must take up a challenge within a year of winning the title and succeeding challenges at yearly intervals.

2. The time limit in world championship matches should be 15 moves per hour.

3. The winner of the match should be the first player to attain a lead of six or eight games, with the champion to decide between the two options.

4. The stake for the match should be not less than £ 1000. (Compare these stipulations with those drawn up at the tournament at London in 1922, p. 80.)

Since funds for the match with Rubinstein had not yet been collected, and since the two men were again on speaking terms, it would have been logical had negotiations begun in earnest for a meeting between Lasker and Capablanca. Logic, however, was to have precious little say in the affairs of the world for the next four years; on August 14, 1914, the Archduke Ferdinand of Austria was assassinated at Sarajevo and all international chess activity, as well as many other things, came to a dead stop.

## 4

# *José Raoul Capablanca*

AMONG the many limitations of the human mind the one most frequently apparent in the modern world is its inability to grasp in more than the vaguest terms occurrences of any magnitude. In the First World War eight and a half million died (almost half a million at the Battle of Verdun alone), but those statistics, by virtue of their very size, mean little to us. We compensate, however, by lighting on isolated instances the significance of which we can to some extent grasp, and making them symbolical: in purely human terms it may mean more than all the statistics to say that at Christmas 1918, Carl Schlechter died of starvation in his native Vienna.

Capablanca, who had spent the war years in America, returned to Europe in September of 1919 to win the Hastings Victory Congress. Negotiations with Lasker were speedily resumed, and almost as speedily turned sour. Several meetings, held with the idea that a match might take place in Holland, led to nothing. Then, according to Lasker, on June 17, 1920, he received a letter from a chess club in Buenos Aires, dated May 15, proposing a match in that city. Lasker replied, repeating his conditions; the would-be organizers in Buenos Aires supported Capablanca's contention that the conditions were unfair to the challenger, whereupon Lasker threw up his hands and renounced his title, naming Capablanca as his successor!

To accept this abdication at its face value is very difficult, and

yet there is good evidence that Lasker meant what he said; it is plain, at any rate, that he deeply resented the well-nigh universal sympathy with Capablanca in their quarrel. The chess world, of course, continued to clamor for a match, and when the Havana Chess Club made an offer, in partnership with a gambling casino, of \$20,000 for the event, with a guarantee of \$11,000 for the champion, Lasker accepted. The first man to score eight wins would be the victor, and there was an even shorter maximum of twenty-four games, but the others of the champion's original demands had been quietly dropped.

José Capablanca (born November 19, 1888), thirty-three years old at the time of the match, was, according to one observer, "of medium height, almost frail, strikingly elegant, with straight, pitch-black hair, evenly divided by a thin white strain"—a kind of intellectual Rudolph Valentino, as it were. He is perhaps most succinctly described as having rather more than his share of *sprezzatura*, an Italian word usually translated "nonchalance" but really meaning the art that conceals art "and makes whatever is done or said appear to be without effort and almost without any thought about it." Only with Capablanca it was all really as effortless as it seemed. His own description, in the introductory chapter of his book *My Chess Career*, of how he came to learn chess is not without a certain charm:

I was not yet five years old when by accident I came into my father's private office and found him playing with another gentleman. I had never seen a game of chess before; the pieces interested me, and I went the next day to see them play again. The third day, as I looked on, my father, a very poor beginner, moved a Knight from a white square to another white square. His opponent, apparently not a better player, did not notice it. My father won, and I proceeded to call him a cheat and to laugh. After a little wrangle, during which I was nearly put out of the room, I showed my father what he had done. He asked me how and what I knew about chess. I answered that I could beat him; he said that that was impossible, considering that I could not even set the pieces correctly. We tried conclusions, and I won. That was my beginning.

Since then he had gone on from success to success with hardly even a minor setback to disturb the tranquillity of his life; the Cuban government had given him a sinecure in its diplomatic service, so he had no material worries, and he lost chess games so infrequently that he could illustrate his book *Chess Fundamentals* with *all* of his lost games up to that time, a grand total of eight. Lasker's distinguished record notwithstanding, Capablanca was a heavy favorite to take the title, and would have been even more so had the Champion's attitude to the match been generally known. Lasker was a stubborn man and, once having renounced the title in favor of Capablanca, apparently regarded the match as a mere formality. His good friend Ossip Bernstein much later reported a conversation he had had with Lasker shortly before the Champion's departure for Havana:

"Have you made any preparations for the match?"

"No."

"Have you taken time out to rest?"

"No."

"At least are you taking along a chessboard in order to study chess on the voyage?"

"No."

"Have you reviewed the openings you will play and studied the games of Capablanca?"

"No."

"That is pure madness," I said. There was no answer. [Ossip Bernstein, "My Encounters with Lasker," *Chess Review*, July 1955.]

Capablanca, be it noted, made no special preparations either, but then, he never did (he proudly claimed to have been of master strength before he ever opened a chess book), and could count on several other advantages anyway. He was playing on his home ground, where the chess fans idolized him and where he was accustomed to the climate. He was also the younger by twenty years. Nevertheless, Lasker started off fairly well, and had rather the edge in the first four games, although all four were drawn. Then, in the fifth, disaster struck:

# QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED

White: Capablanca Black: Lasker

1 P-Q4 P-Q4 4 B-N5 QN-Q2 7 R-B1 P-QN3  
2 N-KB3 N-KB3 5 P-K3 B-K2  
3 P-B4 P-K3 6 N-B3 0-0

At the time this match was played this move was already somewhat old-fashioned and had been displaced in popularity by 7 . . . P-B3, with the usual continuation 8 B-Q3, PxP; 9 BxP, N-Q4; 10 BxB, QxB; 11 0-0, NxN; 12 RxN, P-K4!, a freeing maneuver attributed to Capablanca.

8 PxP PxP 9 Q-R4

In the first game of the match Capablanca had played 9 B-N5, but after 9 . . . B-N2; 10 Q-R4, P-QR3; 11 KBxN, NxN; 12 BxB, QxB; 13 Q-N3, Q-Q3! had no advantage. The best move is probably 9 B-Q3, e.g. 9 . . . B-N2 10 0-0, P-B4; 11 Q-K2, P-B5; 12 B-N1, P-QR3; 13 N-K5, P-N4; 14 P-B4± (Vidmar-Yates, London, 1922).

9 P-B4

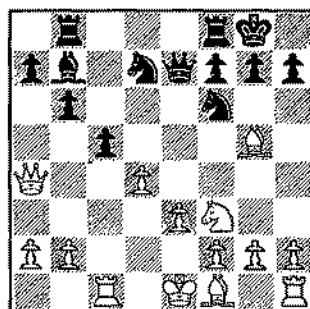
When Capablanca had had Black in this position against Bernstein in Moscow, 1914, he played 9 . . . B-N2 and after 10 B-QR6, BxB; 11 QxB, P-B4; 12 BxN, NxN; 13 PxP, PxP; 14 0-0, Q-N3; 15 Q-K2 obtained fair chances by 15 . . . P-B5. The text is a pawn sacrifice.

10 Q-B6 R-N1 11 NxP B-N2

After 11 . . . NxN; 12 QxN; B-N2; 13 BxB, QxB; 14 Q-N5, QxQ; 15 NxQ, PxP etc. Black probably has sufficient compensation for the pawn.

12 NxBch QxN 13 Q-R4

LASKER



CAPABLANCA

13 QR-B1

And after 13 . . . BxN; 14 PxN, PxP; 15 QxP, N-K4; 16 B-K2, QR-Q1; 17 Q-KB4, R-Q3 Black would have had good counterplay. The move in the text meets with an unexpected reply.

14 Q-R3! Q-K3 15 BxN! QxB 16 B-R6! BxN

On 16 . . . PxP; 17 RxR, RxR; 18 0-0 White comes out a clear pawn ahead.

17 BxR RxB 20 Q-Q3 P-N3 23 R-N2 N-B3  
18 PxN QxP 21 K-B1 R-K5 24 K-N1 PxP  
19 R-KN1 R-K1 22 Q-Q1 Q-R6ch 25 R-B4!

Intending to meet 25 . . . R-N5 by 26 R-B8ch, K-N2; 27 RxR+.

25 PxP 28 Q-Q4ch N-B3 31 P-KR4 PxP?  
26 RxR NxR 29 PxP Q-K3  
27 Q-Q8ch K-N2 30 R-B2 P-KN4

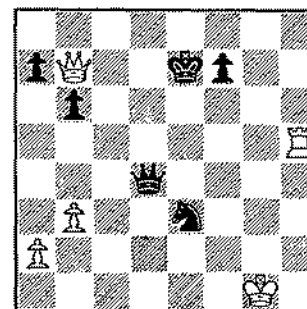
A better defense is offered by 31 . . . K-N3; 32 PxP, N-K5; 33 Q-Q3, Q-N5ch; 34 R-N2, Q-R5; 35 Q-N1, K-N2, winning back the pawn and retaining counterchances that should insure a draw. But even after the text move White has no easy time.

32 QxRP N-N5 33 Q-N5ch K-B1 34 R-B5 P-KR4

On 34 . . . QxPch; 35 QxQ, NxQ; 36 R-B2 White should win easily.

35 Q-Q8ch K-N2 39 P-N3 Q-Q3 43 Q-B3 Q-Q5  
36 Q-N5ch K-B1 40 Q-B4 Q-Q8ch 44 Q-R8ch K-K2  
37 Q-Q8ch K-N2 41 Q-B1 Q-Q2 45 Q-N7ch  
38 Q-N5ch K-B1 42 RxP NxP

LASKER



CAPABLANCA

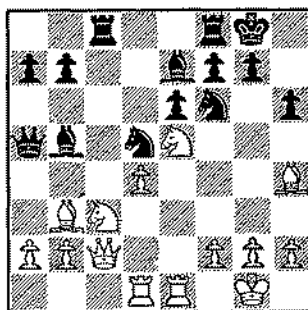


The losing blunder; after 45 . . . K-K3 or . . . K-B3 Black could have avoided the fatal exchange of queens. The rook vs. knight ending is hopeless.

## 46 Q-N8ch Resigns

Despite this misfortune, Lasker showed no signs of weakening, and the next four games were draws. In the tenth game, he got the better of the opening, and after 16 moves the following position was reached:

CAPABLANCA



LASKER

Lasker played 17 KBxN and got nowhere. Later extensive analysis, provoked by Capablanca's claim that at no time in the match had he ever been in any real danger of losing a game, demonstrated that White cannot win by 17 QBxN either, although Black's defense is very difficult: after 17 QBxN, NxB; 18 N-N6!, KR-K1 (18 . . . PxN; 19 RxP, B-B5; 20 RxB+—); 19 RxP!, PxR; 20 BxPch, K-R2; 21 N-B8ch, K-R1; 22 Q-R7ch!, NxQ; 23 N-N6 is mate. So Black must play 17 . . . BxB, and after 18 BxN, PxR; 19 Q-B5, then 19 . . . B-B3 with a tenable game (20 N-N4, B-N4; 21 P-B4, P-N3!). The text of the game:

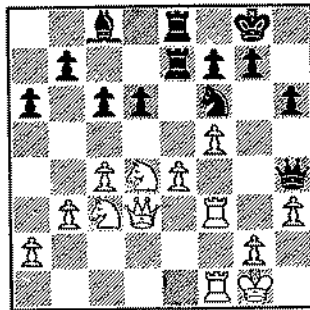
**Queen's Gambit Declined**

*White: Lasker Black: Capablanca* 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, N-KB3; 4 B-N5, B-K2; 5 P-K3, 0-0; 6 N-B3, QN-Q2; 7 Q-B2, P-B4; 8 R-Q1, Q-R4; 9 B-Q3, P-KR3; 10 B-R4, BPxP; 11 KPxP, PxP; 12 BxP, N-N3; 13 B-QN3, B-Q2; 14 0-0, QR-B1; 15 N-K5 (15 Q-K2!), B-N4!; 16 KR-K1, N/N-Q4; 17 KBxN, NxB; 18 BxB, NxB; 19 Q-N3, B-B3; 20 NxB, PxN=; 21 R-K5, Q-N3; 22 Q-B2, KR-Q1; 23 N-K2 (23 N-QR4!), R-Q4; 24 RxR, BPxR; 25 Q-Q2, N-B4; 26 P-QN3 (26 P-KN3!), P-KR4; 27 P-KR3? (27 N-N3! or 27 P-N3!), P-R5!—+; 28 Q-Q3, R-B3; 29 K-B1, P-N3; 30 Q-N1, Q-N5; 31 K-N1, P-R4!; 32 Q-N2, P-R5; 33 Q-Q2, QxQ; 34 RxQ, PxP; 35 PxP, R-N3; 36 R-Q3, R-R3; 37 P-KN4, PxPep; 38 PxP, R-R7; 39 N-B3, R-QB7; 40 N-Q1, N-K2; 41 N-K3, R-B8ch; 42 K-B2, N-B3; 43 N-Q1, R-N8 (43 . . . N-N5; 44 R-Q2, R-N8; 45 N-N2, RxN; 46 RxR, N-Q6ch; 47 K-K2, NxR; 48 K-Q2=); 44 K-K2?, RxP; 45 K-K3, R-N5; 46 N-B3, N-K2; 47 N-K2, N-B4ch; 48 K-B2, P-N4; 49 P-N4, N-Q3; 50 N-N1, N-K5ch; 51 K-B1, R-N8ch; 52 K-N2, R-N7ch; 53 K-B1, R-B7ch; 54 K-K1, R-QR7; 55 K-B1, K-N2; 56 R-K3, K-N3; 57 R-Q3, P-B3; 58 R-K3, K-B2; 59 R-Q3, K-K2; 60 R-K3, K-Q3; 61 R-Q3, R-B7ch; 62 K-K1, R-KN7; 63 K-B1, R-QR7; 64 R-K3, P-K4; 65 R-Q3, PxP; 66 RxP, K-B4; 67 R-Q1, P-Q5; 68 R-B1ch, K-Q4; Resigns

(In appraising his play in the tournament at San Sebastian, 1911, Capablanca had written: "The endings were up to the highest standards, some players thinking that I played them better than Lasker himself, until then reputed to have no equal. I do not believe that I played them better, but just as well.")

Disheartened and doubtless troubled by the unfamiliar climate, Lasker's resistance crumbled. He played weakly in the twelfth game and lost, drew the thirteenth, and then in the fourteenth committed a crowning blunder:

# CAPABLANCA



# LASKER

In this position Lasker played 29 K-R2? and simply lost the exchange after 29 . . . N-N5ch and 30 . . . N-K4. At the end of the game Lasker approached the organizers and asked to be allowed to resign the match on the grounds of ill health, a request that could hardly be refused. And so Capablanca was world champion at last, in consequence of a match that after ten years of anticipation, some of the more vocal members of the public thought "incredibly dull." The new titleholder was later to express a similar opinion about chess in general.

To most people in the chess world the early '20's must have seemed anything but dull—on the contrary it was widely felt that a kind of revolution was taking place in chess thought. A whole new generation of masters had come along since the war and seemed to be violating every principle of sound opening play that Steinitz and Tarrasch had long since pronounced vital to success. Viewed retrospectively, through the writings of their most skillful propagandist, Richard Reti, whose book *Modern Ideas in Chess* is the clearest exposition of their doctrines, these "hypermoderns" (the term has an odd look half a century later) appear to have introduced in an astoundingly short time many ideas indispensable to chess as we know it today, and their advent appears to constitute a watershed in the development of chess style. This is partly true, of course, but also partly an illusion, fostered as much by circumstances as by the participants themselves.

When Siegbert Tarrasch set about to popularize (that is, to disseminate widely) the teachings of Steinitz, he brought to the task a veritable genius for pedagogy, which is largely a genius for simplification. He chose to inculcate general principles in the form of clearly expressed injunctions—"Thou shalt develop knights before bishops, Thou shalt not move the same piece twice in the opening," and so on—illustrated by well-chosen examples. His influence was much like that of Charles Goren in bridge, who popularized in the same sense a point count that translated the expert's method of hand valuation into a number of simple rules. The result was the same for both: many more people than ever before found their respective games comprehensible, and began to play them with enjoyment, and the debt owed them by others who earn their livelihood through exploiting the publics they created is incalculable. But their teaching methods, by their very nature, also brought with them a tendency to dogmatism. Both had, to a certain extent, educated the public "by substituting rule for reason," and in order to progress beyond a certain level in either game it is necessary to penetrate to the reasons behind the rules.

The hypermoderns—Reti, Aron Nimzovich, Efim Bogolubov, Jules Breyer, and others—set out in quest of apparent exceptions to the rules. The ones they found most vulnerable were those that applied to the pawn center—to Tarrasch the principal objective of opening play was control of the center through advance of the central pawns, and the hypermoderns concentrated on ways in which control of the center could be secured through the harmonious development of the pieces. This is a gross oversimplification, of course, but the most visible result of the new movement was the popularity of a number of openings where the advance of the center pawns was deferred for a long time.

Some of the new ideas had already begun to be expressed before the war (some of them date back to Zukertort and Tchigorin), but because international competition was totally halted for four years, what might have been a gradual transition instead occurred in the form of a bombshell. The new men naturally did all they could to foster the idea that they were revolutionaries, and the old guard, most notably Tarrasch, played its role as well by professing not to

understand what the youngsters were up to, and of course losing some very impressive games to them.

The place in this picture of the world champion and of his future challenger, Alexander Alekhine, is less clear than some writers on the modern history of the game have suggested. Capablanca, who was a very strong player before he ever opened a chess book, was obviously innocent of the dogmatism of Tarrasch, and because he acquired his knowledge of specific opening variations mostly by watching what the other players in the tournaments were doing, he had no trouble making the appropriate adjustments in his ideas of the game. Alekhine also absorbed whatever he thought of value, not only from the hypermoderns but from everybody. His main strengths were two: a remarkable talent for combination and for attacking play generally, and a seemingly inexhaustible energy that he expended in a methodical study of the openings hitherto unheard of. Some players had of course submitted the openings to careful scrutiny before, as a glance through the pages of, say, Bilguier's *Handbuch* amply demonstrates, but Alekhine carried on the search for minute improvements with a passion. He was shortly to earn just recompense for his pains.

The new champion's first appearance in tournament play was at London in the summer of 1922, where he finished first, undefeated, of course, and  $1\frac{1}{2}$  points ahead of second-place Alekhine. It was at a meeting of the competitors in this tournament that a new set of rules was drawn up to govern future play for the world title, an expression of widespread dissatisfaction with the state of affairs in which the champion could delay meeting a prospective challenger well-nigh indefinitely. These so-called London Rules (really only on agreement among the men who drew them up) provided that the champion must play within a year of his challenge any acknowledged international master who could raise a purse of not less than \$10,000, of which 20 percent was to be a fee for the titleholder, and the remaining \$8,000 was to be divided between the winner and loser of the match, 60 percent to the winner. Other clauses stipulated that, upon receipt of his challenge, the challenger must deposit \$500 as a guarantee of good faith, and three months before the beginning of the match another \$500, while,

should the champion be unwilling or unable to play the match as scheduled, the title was to pass to the challenger.

The London Rules also contained details about the nature of the match itself: the winner was to be the first to win six games, draws not counting, but no limit was fixed to the total number of games, an omission that the organizers of the 1927 match between Capablanca and Alekhine were to have good cause to regret. The time limit, occasionally in the past yet another cause of disagreement, was to be 40 moves in two and a half hours.

It was as yet two years away from the founding of the *Fédération Internationale des Echecs (FIDE)*, constituted at Paris in 1924, and a good twenty-six years before the body that was to become the ruling authority in international chess could find the opportunity to gain some control over the world title. It wasn't until their congress at The Hague in 1928 that *FIDE* sanctioned the London Rules, and then only as they applied to the proposed return match between Alekhine and Capablanca, as they were then already a dead letter.

Far more interesting than such procedural details was the question of who was to be the next challenger. The most obvious candidate was Rubinstein, whose record before the war certainly proved him worthy of a shot at the title, and Capablanca entered into some desultory negotiations with him, but he was still unable to obtain the necessary financial support, and the matter was quickly dropped. This dramatically pointed up the most serious objection to the London Rules—a challenger without a certain degree of fundraising ability, no matter how worthy in other ways, was just out of luck. Rubinstein's moral right to a match was quickly clouded over, however, by a certain decline in his playing strength; his first prize at Vienna, 1922, was his last major success for some years. A big tournament at Carlsbad in the spring of 1923 saw a three-way tie for first among Alekhine, Bogolubov, and Maroczy, while Rubinstein was only twelfth out of eighteen. In the summer of 1923 Lasker returned to active play with a big victory at Mährisch-Ostrau, and his claim to a return match, if he wanted one, could hardly be denied.

In November of 1923 Alekhine came over to America in quest of financial backing for a prospective challenge to Capablanca, and

quickly succeeded. Money was also found about the same time for a gala tournament in New York that was accordingly held in March and April of 1924, a double round-robin event with eleven players that was certainly one of the strongest in the history of chess. The world champion got off to an awkward start, drawing his first four games and then providing a sensation when in the fifth round he lost to Reti (his first defeat in almost ten years). He made up ground quickly later, but not enough to overtake old Lasker, who, playing some of the best chess of his career, finished 1½ points ahead of Capablanca and 4 points ahead of Alekhine, who was third.

But the picture was to become even more muddled when, in November of 1925, Efim Bogolubov won a major tournament in Moscow, ahead of both Lasker and Capablanca, who were second and third respectively. At the conclusion of this event, Lasker suggested that a match-tournament, along the lines of St. Petersburg, 1895-96, among Capablanca, Alekhine, Bogolubov, and himself might be the best way to settle the championship question—whether he intended that the tournament be for the championship itself or merely to select the next challenger is unclear, but his suggestion met with little enthusiasm, and was quickly dropped.

In 1926 two new players put forth their claims on a match for the title: at Semmering the Austrian Rudolf Spielmann was first, ahead of Alekhine, and then at Dresden, Aron Nimzovich was the winner, ahead of Alekhine and Rubinstein. After the Dresden tournament, Nimzovich dispatched a formal challenge to Capablanca.

Meanwhile, in New York, the same group of men responsible for the organization of the 1924 tournament were busily at work on their own plan to find Capablanca's next challenger. They proposed a six-player match-tournament including the champion with the winner, or the second-prize winner, in the event that Capablanca took first, to be officially designated Capablanca's opponent in his by now long overdue defense of the title. While this was still in the planning stage, however, the Argentine Chess Club of Buenos Aires announced their offer of a \$10,000 purse for a match between Capablanca and Alekhine sometime in 1927. But Capablanca, who appeared throughout sublimely indifferent to

the whole silly business, replied that, as Alekhine had not followed up his 1924 challenge by depositing the forfeit money required by the London Rules (remember them?), he considered that Nimzovich had a prior claim, and allowed him until January 1, 1927, to deposit the required \$500. Why he failed to do so is not known, but New Year's Day 1927 came and went, and Nimzovich's claim along with it. Alekhine, of course, immediately renewed his challenge, this time complying with the stipulation about the forfeit money, apparently to Capablanca's satisfaction.

As the arrangements for the tournament in New York were announced to the public, it became increasingly apparent that the organizers had made a grand botch of the business. They had forgotten altogether to invite both Reti and Bogolubov, and their invitation to Lasker, who was still supposed by many to have first claim on a title match, went astray in the post. The men in New York claimed that they had invited Lasker, but that he had not replied until it was too late, when they had already sent out alternative invitations. Lasker's biographer, on the other hand, says that, in consequence of some quarrel back in 1924, they had decided to exclude him, and only sent an invitation to the ex-champion at the last moment, in response to "considerable public clamor," which was naturally declined. Lasker, miffed over the affair, and over the failure of the chess world in general to provide the means to bring about a return match against Capablanca, in effect retired from the game, and returned only when compelled to do so by economic necessity in 1934.

Nor was the tournament itself any model of decorum. Capablanca was in magnificent form; he pulled ahead as early as the third round and, apart for a brief time when Nimzovich pulled level with him, remained well out in front to the end. After he had beaten Marshall at the start of the tournament's final quarter (each participant played all of the others four times) and secured first place, he announced that he was prepared to accept a draw with each of his next four opponents. Unfortunately, in each of his next three games he acquired, in spite of his best efforts, advantages of varying magnitudes, ranging from a slight pull against Spielmann, to a big edge against Vidmar, to a winning game

against Nimzovich. With Spielmann and Vidmar, he simply took draws in positions where he stood better, but the situation reached the height of absurdity in his game with Nimzovich, where he had to send a message to his opponent (?) through the tournament director to make better moves or he would be unable, with the best will in the world, to avoid winning! Only with Alekhine in the last round did matters proceed smoothly—and the two agreed to an impeccable draw in twenty-six moves—and they apparently liked their little act so well that they took it on the road, and played it several times in Buenos Aires.

Alekhine had finished second in New York, a respectful  $2\frac{1}{2}$  points behind the champion, but one ahead of third-place Nimzovich, anyway. Capablanca had presumably agreed to play the match against Alekhine sometime prior to the tournament, and had accepted the offer of the Argentine Chess Club to sponsor it, but it would obviously have proved embarrassing if the prospective challenger had failed to take second. Alekhine had already suffered a blow to his prestige by a narrow escape in a 1926 training match against a young Dutch player named Max Euwe, that he had won by only a single point, and needed a good result to prove himself worthy of a shot at the title. Capablanca's winning margin in New York, however, must certainly have seemed indicative of the disparity of strength between them, and Capablanca's lifetime score against Alekhine—8 wins, 7 draws and no losses—also boded the challenger little good.

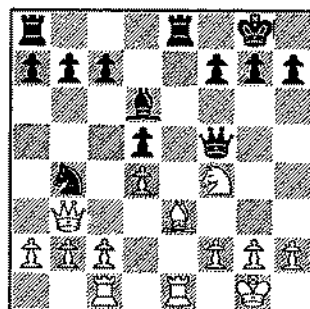
Alexander Alexandrovich Alekhine was born October 19, 1892, in Moscow. His parents were aristocrats, apparently of the kind that gave the Russian aristocracy a bad name: his father is reported once to have lost two million rubles in a single night at Monte Carlo. He was taught chess by his mother when he was about ten years old and took to it immediately, and with great enthusiasm. His progress was rapid; after playing much chess by mail, he entered his first over-the-board tournament in 1907, and by 1909, when he won the All-Russian Amateur at St. Petersburg, was a recognized master. He enjoyed some minor international successes in the years before the war, and was on his way to the biggest one yet, at Mannheim, when the shooting began, and he and the

other Russian players were interned by the German government as citizens of a hostile power. The next few years of Alekhine's life are accounted for largely by unsubstantiated rumor. Somehow he escaped the Germans, made his way back to Russia, joined the Russian army, in which he fought gallantly, being twice wounded and twice decorated, and yet again narrowly missed death in the 1918 Revolution. He and his family of course lost all their property, and he himself reported that his life was spared only because of his reputation as a chessplayer. His subsequent escape from the Soviet Union is also shrouded in romance: it is said that he married his first wife expressly for the purpose, although details are lacking. At any rate in 1921 he was allowed to take part in a tournament at Treiberg, Austria, and instead of returning to Russia afterward, made way to Paris, where he began life anew as a chess professional. In the years following he became the most active of the international players, competing in a score of tournaments in the period 1921-27, mostly with good success. He also found time to take a Doctor of Laws degree from the Sorbonne.

As early as 1923 Alekhine had begun meticulous preparations for a match against Capablanca, studying the champion's games with a thoroughness hitherto unknown (his book *Auf dem Wege zur Weltmeisterschaft* is, in large measure, his own account of those preparations). Capablanca, on the other hand, made no preparations for the match, largely because he never made any, but also doubtless because his previous experiences against Alekhine hardly led him to anticipate any difficulties. The match itself was the only one ever played under the London Rules (six wins to either player would decide) and began on September 16, 1927.

In the first game, Capablanca astonished everybody when he opened 1 P-K4 (the only time that reckless move was played in the course of the match) and Alekhine answered with the French Defense. After 1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 PxP, PxP; 5 B-Q3, N-QB3; 6 N-K2, KN-K2; 7 O-O, B-KB4=; 8 BxB, NxN; 9 Q-Q3, Q-Q2; 10 N-Q1 (B-B4!), O-O; 11 N-K3, NxN; 12 BxN, KR-K1; 13 N-B4 (B-B4!), B-Q3!; 14 KR-K1 (P-QB3!), N-N5; 15 Q-N3? (Q-Q2=), Q-B4; 16 QR-B1? (16 N-Q3, NxN; 17 QxN, QxQ; 18 PxQ, B-N5=), Alekhine played

# ALEKHINE



# CAPABLANCA

the little combination 16 . . . NxBP!; 17 RxN, QxN, winning a pawn and the game (Capablanca resigned after 43 moves).

The second game was a short (19-move) draw, the first of many, but in the third, Capablanca reasserted his authority with the kind of game that his admirers had come to expect of him:

## Queen's Indian Defense

White: Capablanca Black: Alekhine 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 N-KB3, P-QN3; 3 P-KN3, B-N2; 4 B-N2, P-B4; 5 0-0, PxP; 6 NxP, BxB; 7 KxB, P-Q4; 8 P-QB4, P-K3; 9 Q-R4ch, Q-Q2; 10 N-N5, N-B3; 11 PxP, PxP; 12 B-B4, R-B1; 13 R-B1, B-B4; 14 P-QN4, BxNP; 15 RxN, RxR; 16 QxB, N-K5; 17 N-Q2, NxN; 18 QxN, 0-0; 19 R-Q1, R-B4; 20 N-Q4, R-K1; 21 N-N3, R/4-B1; 22 P-K3, Q-R5; 23 QxP, R-B7; 24 R-Q2, RxRP; 25 RxR, QxR; 26 Q-B6, R-KB1; 27 N-Q4, K-R1; 28 B-K5, P-B3; 29 N-K6, R-KN1; 30 B-Q4, P-KR3; 31 P-R4, Q-N8; 32 NxP, Q-N3; 33 P-R5, Q-B2; 34 N-B5, K-R2; 35 Q-K4, R-K1; 36 Q-B4, Q-B1; 37 N-Q6, R-K2; 38 BxBP, Q-R1ch; 39 P-K4, R-KN2; 40 BxR, KxB, 41 N-B5ch, K-B2; 42 Q-B7ch, Resigns

The next three games were hard-fought draws, and then, in the seventh, Capablanca forged ahead with a beautiful win, and one that must have set him feeling that all was once again right with the world:

## QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED

White: Capablanca Black: Alekhine

1 P-Q4 P-Q4 3 N-QB3 N-KB3 5 P-K3 P-B3  
2 P-QB4 P-K3 4 B-N5 QN-Q2 6 N-B3

Both players in the course of the match experimented with other sixth moves for White to avoid the Cambridge Springs Defense; neither 6 Q-B2 nor 6 B-Q3 nor 6 P-QR3 proved successful, however. In the thirty-second game, Alekhine varied with 6 PxP (the Exchange Variation) and scored an impressive victory.

6 Q-R4

This move characterizes the Cambridge Springs Defense, so named after the site of Marshall's great victory in 1904. Alekhine tried it three times in this match and got satisfactory positions in all three games, but scored only one win, losing the other two.

7 N-Q2 B-N5 8 Q-B2 0-0

Both the eleventh and twenty-ninth games continued with 8 . . . PxP; 9 BxN, NxB; 10 NxP, Q-B2; 11 P-QR3, B-K2=.

9 B-R4

An innovation; the usual move at the time was 9 B-K2, but after 9 . . . P-K4; 10 0-0, B-Q3; 11 N-N3, Q-B2 Black has a good game.

9 P-B4

This move was later criticized, but there is nothing wrong with it. Of the other possibilities, 9 . . . N-K5 is weak, e. g. 10 N/2xN, PxN; 11 B-K2, P-K4; 12 0-0, PxP; 13 NxP, P-KB4; 14 P-QR3± (Kashdan-Marshall, New York, 1932) and 9 . . . P-K4 is a dubious pawn sacrifice: after 10 QPxP, N-K5; 11 N/2xN, PxN; 12 P-K6!, N-K4; 13 PxPch, RxP; 14 0-0-0! Black's compensation is nebulous.

10 N-N3 Q-R5 11 BxN NxN 12 QPxP N-K5?

Alekhine took over an hour on this move, and got into serious time trouble later. To add insult to injury, the move itself is no good; he himself afterward recommended 12 . . . BxNch; 13 QxB, N-K5; 14 Q-R5, QxQ; 15 NxQ, NxQBP; 16 PxP, PxP, when White's advantage is insignificant.

13 PxP BxNch 15 R-Q1! PxP  
14 PxN NxP/B4 16 RxP NxN

An analysis by the Russian master Soultanbeieff commends 16 . . . P-QN3 here, and offers the continuation 17 R-Q4, Q-B3; 18 NxN, PxN; 19 R-KR4, P-B4; 20 B-B4ch, K-R1; 21 0-0, B-N2; 22 P-B3, QR-Q1 with

counter-chances for Black "because of the misplaced White rook." Whether or not this line is wholly credible, it is plain that the text simply leaves Black a pawn down with no compensation whatever.

17 PxN Q-B3 18 R-Q4 R-K1 19 B-Q3!

Intending to return the pawn in exchange for good attacking chances against the Black king.

19 QxP 20 BxPch K-B1

After 20 . . . K-R1; 21 B-K4, Q-R6; 22 R-N1, 22 . . . QxP is of course impossible.

21 B-K4 Q-R6 23 P-QB4 P-R4  
22 Q-Q2 B-K3 24 R-N1 QxP

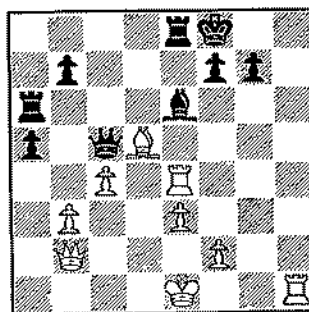
Failure to restore material equality is equivalent to resignation.

25 R-R1 Q-B2 26 Q-N2!

With the threat of 27 Q-R3ch, K-N1; 28 B-R7ch, K-R1; 29 R/4-R4, followed by mate.

26 Q-B4 27 B-Q5 R-R3 28 R-K4

ALEKHINE



CAPABLANCA

28 R-Q3

The king-knight's pawn is lost: if 28 . . . P-B3, 30 R-R8ch wins a piece, and 28 . . . P-KN3; 29 Q-B6 leads to mate.

29 R-R7 K-K2

If now 29 . . . P-KN3, then 30 Q-N7ch, K-K2; 31 QxPch etc.

30 QxP K-Q1 33 QxQ PxQ 36 R-QR7 Resigns  
31 BxB PxP 34 P-B5 R-B3  
32 QxP Q-N5ch 35 RxNP RxP

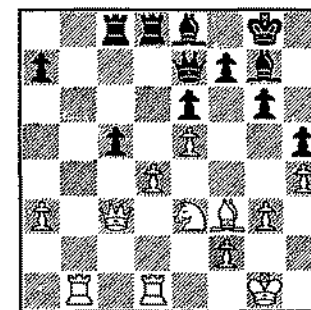
If 36 . . . R-QB1, then 37 R-Q4mate!

Capablanca retained his lead through the next three games, all drawn. In the eleventh, "a true comedy of errors," as Alekhine called it, it was the challenger who made the proverbial next-to-last mistake:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

White: Capablanca Black: Alekhine 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, N-KB3; 4 B-N5, QN-Q2; 5 P-K3, P-B3; 6 N-B3, Q-R4; 7 N-Q2, B-N5; 8 Q-B2, PxP (For 8 . . . 0-0, see the seventh game, above.); 9 BxN, NxP; 10 NxP, Q-B2; 11 P-QR3, B-K2; 12 B-K2 (In the twenty-ninth game Capablanca tried 12 P-QN4! and White had a small advantage.) 0-0; 13 0-0, B-Q2; 14 P-QN4, P-QN3; 15 B-B3!, QR-B1; 16 KR-Q1, KR-Q1; 17 QR-B1, B-K1; 18 P-N3, N-Q4; 19 N-N2, Q-N1; 20 N-Q3, B-N4; 21 R-N1, Q-N2; 22 P-K4, NxN; 23 QxN, Q-K2(?) (23 . . . R-B2!; 24 B-N2, B-B3; 25 P-K5, B-K2; 26 QR-B1, Q-B1=); 24 P-KR4!, B-R3; 25 N-K5, P-N3; 26 N-N4(?) (N-B4!), B-N2; 27 P-K5, P-KR4; 28 N-K3, P-QB4!; 29 NPxP, PxP;

ALEKHINE



CAPABLANCA



30 P-Q5?! (30 R-N7, R-Q2; 31 RxR, BxR; 32 P-Q5, PxP; 33 NxP, Q-K3; 34 N-B4=), PxP; 31 NxP, Q-K3 (31... QxKP??; 32 QxQ, BxQ; 33 N-K7ch+-); 32 N-B6ch(?) (32 R-N7, BxP; 33 Q-R5, K-N2; 34 RxP±), BxN; 33 PxB, RxRch; 34 RxR, B-B3!; 35 R-K1, Q-B4; 36 R-K3, P-B5!; 37 P-R4, P-R4 (37... BxP?; 38 B-K4, Q-N5; 39 B-B3, Q-Q2; 40 R-K7, Q-Q6; 41 QxQ, PxQ; 42 RxRP=); 38 B-N2, BxB; 39 KxB, Q-Q4ch; 40 K-R2, Q-KB4; 41 R-B3, Q-B4; 42 R-B4, K-R2 (Q-N3!); 43 R-Q4, Q-B3? (Q-N3!); 44 QxRP, P-B6; 45 Q-R7!, K-N1 (*Analysis by Alekhine shows that Black has nothing better. I: 45... QxBP?; 46 R-KB4, QxR; 47 PxQ, P-B7; 48 QxPch, K-R3; 49 P-B5! =; II: 45... Q-B2; 46 QxQ followed by 47 R-Q1 =; III: 45... R-B2; 46 Q-N8, P-B7; 47 R-Q8, QxBP!; 48 R-R8ch!!, QxR =*); 46 Q-K7, Q-N3; 47 Q-Q7? (47 R-Q7!, QxPch; 48 K-R1!, Q-R7; 49 R-Q8ch, RxR; 50 QxRch, K-R2; 51 Q-KB8 and Black has nothing better than perpetual check.), Q-B4!; 48 R-K4, QxPch; 49 K-R3, Q-B8ch; 50 K-R2, Q-B7ch; 51 K-R3, R-B1; 52 Q-B6, Q-B8ch; 53 K-R2, Q-B7ch; 54 K-R3, Q-B8ch; 55 K-R2, K-R2! 56 Q-B4, Q-B7ch; 57 K-R3, Q-N8!; 58 R-K2, Q-B8ch? (58... Q-R8ch!; 59 R-R2, Q-B6!-+); 59 K-R2, QxP; 60 P-R5? (60 R-QB2, R-K1; 61 K-N2! threatening both 62 RxP and 62 R-B2=), R-Q1? (Q-B8); 61 P-R6? (K-N2) Q-B8! 62 Q-K4, R-Q7; 63 RxR, PxR; 64 P-R7, P-Q8(Q); 65 P-R8(Q), Q-N8ch; 66 K-R3, Q/Q-B8ch; Resigns

This game constituted the turning point of the match. In the twelfth, Capablanca, obviously demoralized, played (for him) very badly, and found himself at the end of it behind again, 3-2, this time to stay. There followed nine (!) consecutive draws, most of them in fewer than thirty moves, in which the same opening lines appeared again and again—from the sporting point of view, the most disagreeable feature of the match. The seventeenth and twentieth games were exceptions, but also failed to produce a decisive result. Then, in the twenty-first—

#### QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED

White: Capablanca Black: Alekhine

1 P-Q4	P-Q4	4 B-N5	QN-Q2	7 R-B1	P-QR3
2 P-QB4	P-K3	5 P-K3	B-K2		
3 N-QB3	N-KB3	6 N-B3	0-0		

Alekhine played this move in eight games, scoring one win (this one) and seven draws.

#### 8 P-QR3

In the twenty-third game, Capablanca found the best answer: 8 PxP!; there followed 8... PxP; 9 B-Q3, P-B3; 10 0-0, N-K1=—back to the drawing board. In the twenty-fifth game, yet another slight improvement: 10 Q-B2!, R-K1 (*in the twenty-seventh game Alekhine tried 10... P-R3; 11 B-R4, N-K1 with no better success*); 11 Q-Q, N-B1; 12 KR-K1, B-K3; 12 N-QR4, with a slight edge.

8	P-R3	9 B-R4	PxP	10 BxP	P-QN4
---	------	--------	-----	--------	-------

In the thirteenth, fifteenth, and nineteenth games, Alekhine had played 10... P-B4 here; all three continued 11 PxP, NxP; 12 B-K2, P-QN3, with equality; all three were shortly drawn.

11 B-K2	B-N2	13 PxP	NxP
12 0-0	P-B4	14 N-Q4	

Obviously 13 QxQ, KRxQ; 14 KR-Q1 would have led to yet another quick draw. The threat is now 14 BxN, BxB; 15 N/3xP, which at the moment would lose two pieces for a rook: 13 BxN, BxB; 14 NxP, QxQ; 15 KRxQ, N-N6; 16 R-B7, BxN—+.

14	R-B1	15 P-QN4
----	------	----------

The square-weaknesses created by this advance prove very costly later; 15 B-B3 was safer, at any rate.

15	QN-Q2	16 B-N3	N-N3	17 Q-N3	KN-Q4
----	-------	---------	------	---------	-------

On 17... N-B5 immediately, White could continue 18 KR-Q1, Q-N3; 19 P-QR4; the text is played with an eye to 18... NxN; 19 RxN, B-Q4; 20 Q-N2, RxR; 21 QxR, Q-R1! followed by 22... R-B1±.

18 B-B3	R-B5!	19 N-K4	Q-B1	20 RxR
---------	-------	---------	------	--------

Alekhine considers this the decisive positional error and recommends 20 Q-N1, R-Q1; 21 N-Q2, RxR; 22 RxR, Q-R1; 23 B-B7, but then adds, "Still, the text move can by no means be considered as an actual blunder; and Capablanca lost this game only because he did not realize in time the dangers of his position and was, in the issue, regularly outplayed." Nowhere in his notes, however, does he indicate just where White could have saved himself.

20	NxR	21 R-B1	Q-R1	22 N-B3
----	-----	---------	------	---------

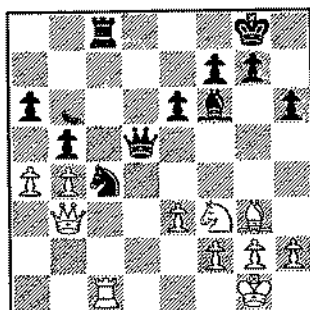
And not 22 N-QB5, BxN; 23 PxB, R-B1, 24 B-K2, RxP; 25 BxN, Q-QB1!, etc.

22 R-B1  
23 NxN BxN

24 BxB QxB  
25 P-QR4 B-B3

26 N-B3

ALEKHINE



CAPABLANCA

26 B-N7!

"In order to play . . . P-K4," says Alekhine, "without restricting the activity of the Bishop." He offers the following analysis: I: 27 R-Q1, PxP!; 28 QxP, N-N3; 29 RxQ, NxQ; 30 R-Q1, N-B6; 31 R-K1, R-B5; 32 B-Q6, N-K5; 33 B-K7, P-B3; 34 R-N1, K-B2; 35 K-B1, B-B6 with an easy win.

II: 27 R-N1, N-R6!; 28 QxB, NxR; 29 QxN, Q-N6; 30 Q-KB1, PxP; 31 P-R3, P-R6 and wins.

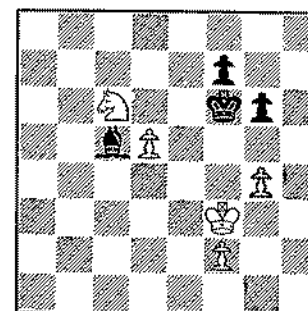
27 R-K1 R-Q1 29 P-R3 P-K4 31 N-Q4  
28 PxP PxP 30 R-N1 P-K5!

No better are 31 N-K1, Q-Q7 or 31 N-R2, Q-Q6, when Black penetrates with fatal effect.

31 BxN 32 R-Q1 NxP! Resigns

It was now obvious to all but Capablanca's most fanatical supporters that the title was about to change hands. Alekhine also secured a winning position in the twenty-second game, but threw it away with one unfortunate move. The next six games were also drawn, and the twenty-ninth was also well along to the same result when, in the following position, Alekhine (Black) made a fatal blunder:

ALEKHINE



CAPABLANCA

Both 55 . . . B-N3 and 55 . . . B-Q3 would have sufficed to draw, but 55 . . . K-N4, the move actually played, lost without a chance: 56 N-K5!, B-Q5; 57 NxPch, K-B3; 58 N-Q8, B-N3; 59 N-B6, B-B4; 60 K-B4!, BxP; 61 P-N5ch, K-B2; 62 N-K5ch, K-K2; 63 NxPch, K-Q3; 64 K-K4, B-N6; 65 N-B4, K-K2; 66 K-K5, B-K8; 67 P-Q6ch, K-Q2; 68 P-N6, B-N5; 69 K-Q5, K-K1; 70 P-Q7ch, Resigns

With the score at 4-3, the outcome seemed once again in doubt, but Alekhine shortly settled matters by winning the thirty-second and thirty-fourth games, both dour struggles, in sixty-three and eighty-two moves, respectively. Thus the longest match in the history of the world championship came at last to an end; the final score 6-3 in favor of the challenger, with 25 draws.

## 5

## Alexander Alekhine

"Also haben die Ereignisse meine Arbeit belohnt, mein Streben gekront!" ("Thus has the outcome rewarded my labors and crowned my aspirations!") begins Alekhine's own account of his match against Capablanca, a form of expression that hardly appears sentimental when one recalls his four years of preparation, and the tremendous strain of the match itself. Throughout, he had subordinated his usual aggressive and chancy style to the much more cautious and solid approach he thought necessary to wrest the title from the man who had earned for himself the nickname "The Chess Machine."

Reuben Fine, then at the threshold of his own brilliant career, has left us a memorable account of his first meeting with Alekhine:

When I first met him, at Pasadena in 1932, I began to understand the secret of his genius. He was showing a game with Euwe played at Berne a few months earlier, and his eyes and bearing had a strange intensity which I had never seen before. The man loved chess, it was the breath of life to him. At the bridge table he would suddenly start talking about an obscure variation in the Scotch; on the train to Mexico he assiduously devoted four hours a day to the analysis of new lines; any game, played by anybody anywhere, was good enough to sit him down and evolve new ideas for hours on end; on off days and periods he amused himself by playing rapid transit. He lived for chess, and chess alone. [Fine, *Chess Marches On*]

Many people who knew him write in their reminiscences of his wit and charm, his talents as a raconteur, and his general amiability (except, of course, over the chessboard). There was another side to his personality, however, that as the years passed came more and more to the fore, and toward the end made him seem like a character out of some dark and terrible Russian novel. Perhaps one of his more trivial foibles is most indicative: his devotion to chess didn't keep him from "improving" the scores of his own games for publication, whenever he thought he could get away with it, nor claiming someone else's analytical labors as his own. In the early '30's he developed a drinking problem that was to become increasingly acute as time went on, and that culminated in a pathetic incident during his 1935 championship match against Euwe. He was found too drunk to play one of the games, and was reportedly in some state of inebriation during most of the ones that were actually played as well. Of his activities during the last years of his life, and especially of his collaboration, willing or unwilling, with the Nazi propaganda machine, it will be necessary to say more later.

Late in 1927, the *Fédération Internationale des Echecs* circulated a letter among its members (the federations of the various countries that are its constituent units) stating that the conditions under which the world championship was decided "need very considerable modifications for the benefit of chess generally." Unfortunately *FIDE* could do nothing at the time to assert its authority over the situation; for one thing, it could not by itself hope to finance future matches, and, for another, to gain control over the title when it was still in the hands of an individual who was encouraged by tradition to regard it as his personal property would have posed many difficulties, both legal and moral.

The tangled story of Capablanca's fruitless efforts to secure a return match with Alekhine indicate some of the shortcomings of the contemporary state of affairs. First, it is important to understand that the two men, who had been close friends for a long while before, at the time of the 1927 match thoroughly detested each other. Since neither was by nature very forgiving, and to call either "as proud as Lucifer" would be to slander the Father of Lies, negotiations were rendered very delicate.

There was also the question whether Capablanca really wanted

a return match at all. It was certainly the opinion of many knowledgeable people that Capablanca wanted merely that the failure to bring about such a match was seen to rest squarely with Alekhine, but was less than enthusiastic about the idea of another meeting. On the other hand, we have the testimony of Hans Kmoch, an unimpeachable witness if ever there was one:

In Kissingen, my contact with Capablanca became rather close. We had long walks together, usually talking about the World Championship in reference to which Capablanca always used the expression "my title," making it seem that the title had only incidentally and temporarily strayed to Alekhine. More than once he explained to me how I could make a lot of money. Very simple: just organize the return match against Alekhine and bet as much as possible on me; you will win, that much is absolutely sure. [Hans Kmoch, "Reminiscences of Capablanca," *Chess Review*, March, 1954]

Kmoch also supplies some details about the way the actual negotiations were conducted:

At this time, Capablanca stayed in Paris and challenged Alekhine to a return match, using myself as an intermediary. I conveyed the closed letter to Alekhine who kept it for about two weeks and then returned it to me, declaring his unwillingness to accept any letter from Capablanca in this way. That ended, so far as I know, the my-title tragedy.

At Kissingen in August 1928, Efim Bogolubov won a big tournament ahead of Capablanca, and forthwith challenged Alekhine to a match for the world championship. Alekhine accepted "in principle" and the customary wrangling began, interrupted by a firm offer to host the Alekhine-Capablanca return match by, of all places, Bradley Beach, New Jersey. Ignoring the offer, Alekhine met with Bogolubov in Europe, and arranged for a match that duly began on September 6, 1929, at Wiesbaden, Germany, and later moved on to other cities in Germany and Holland.

Had Capablanca been somehow out of the picture, no one would have denied that Efim Bogolubov had as much right as anybody to a match for the title. Born April 14, 1889, in Kiev, he began his

international career in the tournament in Mannheim, 1914, which was interrupted by the war, and he was one of the foreign masters detained by the German government in a camp near Treiberg. To help while away the time, frequent tournaments were organized, from which Bogolubov's chess profited so greatly that by the Armistice he had risen to the top class of the world's players. After the war he settled in Germany, marrying a German girl, but did not renounce his Russian citizenship until 1926, and so was eligible to compete in the III and IV Soviet Championships, both of which he won, and to enter the 1925 Moscow international tournament as a representative of the Soviet Union. It was his astonishing success in that tournament, in which he finished 1½ points ahead of Lasker and two ahead of world champion Capablanca, that first brought him to the fore as a candidate for the world crown. Since then he had scored numerous successes, but despite his record, no one considered that he had much of a chance against Alekhine, and everybody was right, the match ending +11-5=9 in the champion's favor.

The games themselves are somewhat below Alekhine's standards of the time; his opening play was plainly experimental, and it is difficult to believe that he was not enjoying a much-needed rest from the trials of doing battle with Capablanca. The eighth game is indicative:

### *Queen's Indian Defense*

*White:* Bogolubov *Black:* Alekhine 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-QN3; 3 N-QB3, B-N2; 4 P-B3, P-Q4; 5 PxP, NxP; 6 P-K4, NxN; 7 PxN, P-K3; 8 B-N5ch, N-Q2; 9 N-K2, B-K2; 10 0-0, P-QR3; 11 B-Q3, P-QB4; 12 B-N2?, Q-B2; 13 P-KB4, N-B3; 14 N-N3, P-KR4!; 15 Q-K2, P-R5; 16 N-R1, N-R4; 17 Q-N4, 0-0-0; 18 QR-K1, K-N1; 19 P-B5, P-K4; 20 P-Q5, P-B5; 21 B-B2, B-B4ch; 22 N-B2, P-N3; 23 PxP, QR-N1; 24 B-B1, B-QB1; 25 Q-B3, RxP; 26 K-R1, N-N6ch!; 27 PxN, PxPch; 28 N-R3, BxN; 29 PxB, RxPch; 30 K-N2, R-R7mate

During the next few years Alekhine played the best chess of his career, and some of the greatest games in chess history—"Alekhine plays *Sonnenschach*," one of his colleagues was moved to say, chess that sparkles like the sun. His victories at San Remo in 1930 and at Bled in 1931 inspired a whole generation of rising youngsters, and are hardly diminished even when one remembers that he used his position as world champion to cause Capablanca's exclusion from both of those events. Clearly from 1927 until he came second to the young Czechoslovak champion Salo Flohr in the Hastings Christmas Congress of 1934, he seemed all but invincible.

Flohr (b. 1908) was only one of a number of young players who came to the fore in the early '30's. From the United States came three, Isaac Kashdan, Reuben Fine, and Samuel Reshevsky, who, along with veteran Frank Marshall and others of the younger generation—Al Horowitz, Arthur Dake, and Herman Steiner—were responsible for four consecutive American victories in the biannual Olympiads, beginning with the one at Prague in 1931. Kashdan (b. 1905), a little older than the others, was a positional player of high caliber whose forte was the endgame; he enjoyed his greatest successes in the late '20's, when he was sometimes spoken of as a candidate for the world championship, but declined rather quickly from that exalted position and, although he remained one of the best international players for some years, never made a serious bid for a match. Reuben Fine, born in 1914 and raised in New York City and a product of its active chess community, began play in European tournaments in 1933, and amassed a series of victories that culminated in a tie for first at the AVRO tournament of 1938, played ostensibly to determine Alekhine's next challenger. He was one of the six invited to play in the tournament that, in 1948, was held to crown Alekhine's successor, but was then absorbed in his medical studies (he is now a prominent psychiatrist), declined, and retired altogether from competitive chess in 1951.

Samuel Reshevsky (b. 1911) had already known worldwide fame when, as a child of eight, he made a tour of Europe and America giving a series of simultaneous exhibitions and causing astonishment wherever he went. Born Schmul Rzeszewski in a village in Russian Poland, he learned to play chess at the age of

four, like Capablanca, through watching his father play, and in the very next year began his career as a prodigy with some exhibitions in Poland and a game in which he put up stiff resistance against Akiba Rubinstein. His subsequent tours, climaxing with his play in a Master's tournament in New York in 1922 when he beat Janowsky, gained more space for chess in the newspapers of the world than any other chess events, up until Bobby Fischer's recent matches on the way to the world title.

After the New York tournament Reshevsky withdrew from chess for a time in order to complete his education, but returned to play in the early '30's, first in American events (his family had remained in the United States after Sammy's final tour) and then, in 1935, in international play.

While the advent in the United States of so many strong young players at the same time appears in retrospect largely fortuitous, the growth of chess in the Soviet Union was the result of strenuous government-sponsored efforts on a large scale. After the October 1918 Revolution, chess, like every other aspect of Russian public life, was brought to an extent under government control, its political value on several levels was appreciated in official circles, and a program was begun both to encourage chess among the masses and to bring the quality of Russian master play up to the standards prevailing in the West. The success of efforts to popularize chess among the working classes is indicated by the increase in the number of officially registered players from about 1,000 in 1923 to 150,000 in 1929 to over half a million in 1934.

The second goal, the creation of a body of Soviet players who could compete on equal terms with players in capitalist countries, was also achieved quickly, although at first the country's best players were of course those who had learned their chess before the Revolution. It wasn't until 1927 that the first of the new breed appeared: in that year the sixteen-year-old Mikhail Botvinnik (born August 17, 1911, in Moscow) won fifth prize in the V Soviet championship and was awarded the title of Master.

Botvinnik won the Soviet championship in 1931 and 1933, tied a match in 1933 against Salo Flohr, by then considered one of the world's leading players, and in 1935 tied for first with

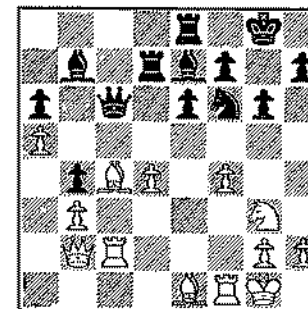
Capablanca in a large international tournament in Moscow, after which he was generally regarded as one of the likeliest candidates for a shot at the world title.

In the same year the Estonian national team brought with them to the VI Olympiad in Warsaw a tall, slender teen-ager named Paul Keres, who had won their country's championship the year before. His play on first board in that tournament, where he made a score of 65.8 percent and played several brilliant games, at once placed him in the foremost rank of the younger generation. His sudden success was all the more astonishing because the small town of Parnau, in which he was born on January 7, 1916, and where he had lived most of his life until that time, was not exactly one of the world's chess centers. He and his brother had learned chess in much the same way as Capablanca and Reshevsky, by watching their father, but evinced no precocious genius; for years their only opponents were each other. It wasn't until some years later that they discovered that chess games could be recorded, but when they did, they began collecting them by copying them out from every possible source, and soon young Paul had a "library" of about 1,000 games. His earliest competitive chess was naturally by correspondence, and in his early teens he usually had well over a hundred postal games going simultaneously.

After his success at Warsaw, Keres became extremely active in international competition, and in a few years amassed an impressive record, including in 1938 a tie for first place with Fine in the AVRO tournament, and, since he had won one and drawn one in his two games against Fine, was declared the winner, and designated the official challenger to Alekhine.

With the names of ever younger and more formidable challengers on everyone's lips, and a pretty formidable old one in the shape of Capablanca back in his best form, Alekhine sat down at Baden-Baden on April 1, 1934, to play a return match against Bogolubov. News that the match had been arranged had been greeted in the chess world with something less than jubilation, and the match itself regarded as in the nature of a giant exhibition. How Alekhine himself regarded it may be guessed by a note that he wrote to Bogolubov's move 29 . . . Q-Q3? in the following position from the fourth game:

BOGOLUBOV



ALEKHINE

As White was not threatening anything there was no reason to delay matters. 29 . . . N-N5! would have won at least a Pawn by a still dominating position. [*sic*]

This game—more than any other—proves how useless from the sporting point of view was the arrangement of this second match, and at the same time explains my indifferent play on a number of occasions. I felt sure that Bogolubov was no longer able to take advantage of the opportunities my play might present to him, and—very unfortunately for the general artistic value of the present match—the score 7 to 1 in my favor after the twenty-second game fully justified my sanguine outlook. [A. A. Alekhine, *My Best Games of Chess, 1924-1937*]

Lest the reader be carried away in sympathy for Alekhine in the lamentable circumstances that compelled him to play Bogolubov, unworthy though he was, a second time, it is necessary to note that as far back as February 20, 1931, Capablanca had written to Alekhine, demanding a return match by the following winter, and threatening that if he didn't get one, he would claim the championship by default. Alekhine pondered his reply for several months and then issued a statement that he considered Capablanca's challenge formally annulled through the challenger's failure to post the \$500 forfeit fee required by the London Rules. As Capablanca never did assert his claim to the title, except privately, a claim that would of course have resulted in a Great Schism in the chess world and possibly in a return match, the whole silly business ended in reciprocal paroxysms of farce and counter-farce.

The final score of the Bogolubov match was  $+8-3=15$ . At its conclusion, Alekhine received a congratulatory telegram from Max Euwe, incidentally announcing that the Dutch Chess Federation had accepted the champion's terms for a match against him in the autumn of 1935. While Euwe was of course not Capablanca, he was by this time a far more plausible challenger than Bogolubov had been, and news of the forthcoming meeting was greeted with widespread interest, if not enthusiasm, throughout the world.

Machgielis Euwe was born May 20, 1901, in the village of Watergraafsmeer, now a suburb of Amsterdam. He had learned chess from his mother when he was six years old, and the attentions of his youth were divided between the game and mathematics, in both of which he made orderly progress. In 1920 he made his debut in international chess in a tournament at Göteborg, and in 1923 received his doctorate in mathematics, and he has since spent much of his life teaching math in the Dutch public school system and competing in chess events on his holidays.

Despite the infrequency of his tournament appearances, Euwe had already scored noteworthy successes, but his reputation in 1935 was based largely on his match record, much of which consisted of narrow losses to very strong players: in 1927 to Alekhine by  $+2-3=5$ , in 1928 twice to Bogolubov by  $+2-3=5$  and by  $+1-2=7$ , and in 1931 to Capablanca by  $+0-2=8$ ; in 1933 he had tied a match with Flohr. Doubtless outside of Holland, where his growing prowess had generated unbounded enthusiasm for the game, he was allowed very little chance to win against Alekhine, but was widely expected to put up an interesting battle.

When Alekhine won three of the first four games, however, it looked as if Euwe would prove as little able to resist the champion's relentless attacking play as Bogolubov had been; with the score 4-2, Alekhine scored another impressive victory in the seventh game:

**FRENCH DEFENSE**  
**White: Alekhine Black: Euwe**  
 1 P-K4 P-K3

Euwe played the French Defense four times in the first nine games of the match, scored only one draw, and then abandoned it.

2 P-Q4 P-Q4      3 N-QB3 B-N5      4 N-K2

In the third game, Alekhine had revived the old move 4 P-QR3, getting the better of it after 4 . . . BxNch; 5 PxP, PxP; 6 Q-N4, N-KB3; 7 QxNP, R-N1; 8 Q-R6, P-B4; 9 N-K2, QN-Q2. See the notes to the seventh game of the 1954 Botvinnik-Smyslov match, p. 160. In the ninth, he was to try 4 Q-N4, with the continuation 4 . . . N-KB3; 5 QxNP, R-N1; 6 Q-R6, R-N3; 7 Q-K3, NxP?; 8 B-Q3±. In his notes he pointed out that with 7 . . . P-B4! "Black would have obtained a sound initiative."

For the most popular continuation, 4 P-K5, P-B4; 5 P-QR3, see the notes to the ninth game of the 1954 Botvinnik-Smyslov match.

4                    PxP                    5 P-QR3 B-K2

The alternative, 5 . . . BxNch, is also good enough: 6 NxP, N-QB3; 7 B-QN5, N-K2; 8 B-N5, P-B3; 9 B-K3, 0-0; 10 Q-Q2, P-B4; 11 P-B3, PxP; 12 PxP, P-K4±.

6 NxP N-QB3                    7 P-KN4!?

In the fifth game Alekhine played 7 B-K3, but after 7 . . . N-B3; 8 N/2-B3, 0-0; 9 N-N3, P-QN3; 10 B-Q3, B-N2; 11 0-0, Q-Q2, had no advantage. Not that the carefree text move ought to have brought him any.

7                    P-QN3

After 7 . . . N-B3!; 8 NxNch, BxN; 9 B-K3, P-KR4!; 10 PxP, Q-Q4 Black has a fine game.

8 B-N2 B-N2                    9 P-QB3 N-B3                    10 N/2-N3 0-0

Alekhine points out that this decision is very risky, and that Black might have continued safely with 10 . . . Q-Q2 and subsequently . . . 0-0-0. Euwe, down by three points in the match, doubtless perceived the risk, but evidently decided to court the attack and hope to refute it—an idea that one can criticize only with the benefit of hindsight.

11 P-N5 NxN                    12 NxN K-R1                    13 Q-R5! Q-K1

Of course not 13 . . . P-B4 because of 14 P-N6!, winning immediately.

14 N-B6! BxN

On 14 . . . PxN Alekhine gives 15 PxP, N-R4 (15 . . . BxBP; 16 B-K4 leads to mate); 16 PxP, QxP; 17 BxB, NxP; 18 B-N5, P-KB3; 19 B-R6, R-KN1; 20 0-0-0, N-Q3; 12 KR-K1+—.

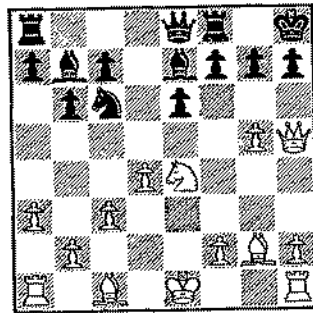
15 PxP PxP                    16 Q-R4 Q-Q1                    17 B-B4! P-K4

It was now necessary to play 18 . . . P-B4, although the endgame after 19 QxQ, QRxQ; 20 BxP would have been hardly pleasant for Black.

18 B-N3 P-B4                    19 PxP R-KN1                    20 B-B3?



EUWE



Position after 13 Q-K1 ...

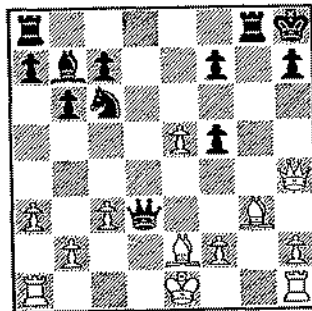
ALEKHINE

With 20 Q-R3! White can prevent Black's counterattack; if then 20 ... Q-Q6 there follows 21 B-R4!

20 Q-Q6! 21 B-K2

The attempt to win a piece by 21 BxN would be fatal after 21 ... B-R3!; 22 Q-R5, R-N5!.

EUWE



ALEKHINE

21 Q-K5?

Alekhine shows that 21 ... Q-B7; draws as follows: 22 Q-B6ch, R-N2; 23 R-KN1!, QxP; 24 P-K6!!, QxRch; 25 B-Q1, N-Q5!; 26 QxRch!, KxQ; 27 B-R4ch, K-R3!; 28 B-N5ch, K any; 29 B-R4ch etc.

22 QxQ PxQ 23 B-R4!

And not 23 0-0-0, RxB!; 24 RPxR, NxP with excellent drawing chances.

23 P-KR3 25 B-B6ch K-R2 27 BxP  
24 0-0-0 QR-K1 26 P-KB4! PxPep

After 27 B-Q3ch, R-N3 Black can put up stiff resistance.

27 N-R4	32 K-N1	K-B4	37 R-K1ch	K-B6
28 BxB	NxB	33 R-Q1	NxKP	38 RxR
29 R-Q7	N-B4	34 R-B1ch	K-K5	39 R-Q4
30 RxPch	K-N3	35 RxP	N-B5	40 R-KR4
31 RxP	N-Q6ch	36 R-Q7	K-K6	41 R-QN4

Resigns

With the score 5-2 in his favor, it seemed as if Alekhine had all but disposed of yet another innocuous challenger. Euwe won the eighth game after a long struggle, but Alekhine came back to win the ninth, against the last of Euwe's French Defenses. Then, in an unprecedented collapse, Alekhine could manage only one full point, with two draws, out of the next six games, so that at the halfway mark the score was tied at 7½-7½.

The usual explanation for Alekhine's remarkable *volte-face* is that he was falling-down drunk most of the time, and certainly his drinking problem was more apparent during the match than ever before. But both players afterward held that overconfidence, rather than drink, was primarily responsible. After all, Alekhine had been drinking heavily for years before, and it never seemed to bother him much. It is also important to remember that Euwe was a great player, then in his prime, who was, moreover, playing with a wonderful insouciance: he wasn't really expected to win and could, therefore, relax and do his best.

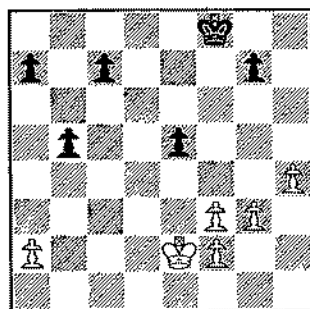
As the match continued, neither player seemed able to gain a decisive edge: Alekhine revived temporarily, and was again two points up at one stage, but Euwe, in winning the twenty-first game, once more pulled level with him. The next two games were drawn, as was also the twenty-fourth, but not before the play had revealed what a strain the struggle had exerted on both players:

### Dutch Defense

White: Euwe Black: Alekhine 1 P-Q4, P-K3; 2 P-QB4, P-KB4; 3 P-KN3, B-N5ch; 4 B-Q2, B-K2; 5 B-N2, N-KB3; 6 N-QB3, 0-0;

7 N-B3, N-K5; 8 0-0, B-B3 (For notes on the opening, see the twenty-sixth game, below. There Alekhine played 8 . . . P-QN3.); 9 NxN (Or 9 Q-B2, NxB; 10 QxN, P-Q3; 11 P-K4, PxP; 12 NxP, N-B3; 13 QR-Q1, B-Q2=, Grunfeld-Spielmann, Vienna, 1935.); PxN; 10 N-K1, BxP (10 . . . P-Q4; 11 B-QB3±.); 11 BxP, BxP; 12 BxPch, KxB; 13 Q-B2ch, K-N1; 14 QxB, N-B3; 15 N-B3, P-Q3; 16 P-B5!, PxP; 17 B-B3, Q-K2; 18 QR-Q1, P-QN3; 19 Q-B2 (P-KR4!), B-N2; 20 Q-N6(?) (P-KR4!), Q-B2!; 21 Q-N5 (21 Q-N4, QR-Q1; 22 N-N5?, QxPch!!++), QR-Q1; 22 P-KR4, RxR; 23 RxR, N-Q5 (N-N5!); 24 BxN, PxP? (24 . . . BxN!; 25 BxBP, PxP; 26 PxP, QxP; 27 R-Q2, P-B5—+); 25 RxP, BxN; 26 R-KB4, Q-R4; 27 RxRch? (27 RxP, QxQ; 28 RxRch, KxR; 29 PxQ=), KxR; 28 Q-B4ch, Q-B2; 29 QxB, QxQ; 30 PxQ, P-K4!; 31 K-B1, P-QN4; 32 K-K2,

#### ALEKHINE



#### EUWE

P-B4? (P-R4++); 33 K-K3, Draw.

After this lucky escape, Euwe came back to take the lead with a victory in the twenty-fifth game. In the twenty-sixth, he played what was afterward considered the best game of the match, the so-called "Pearl of Zandvoort":

#### DUTCH DEFENSE

White: Euwe Black: Alekhine

1 P-Q4 P-K3 2 P-QB4 P-KB4 3 P-KN3 B-N5ch

This check, both here and in the Queen's Indian Defense (after 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-KB3, P-QN3; 4 P-KN3), was one of

Alekhine's playthings throughout the latter part of his career. The idea is that the White bishop is badly placed on Q2, weakening the queen's pawn by obstructing the queen along the file.

4 B-Q2 B-K2 5 B-N2 N-KB3 6 N-QB3

With the more modern move 6 Q-N3!, White can secure a small advantage in all lines, e.g.: 6 . . . P-Q4; 7 B-N4, BxBch; 8 QxB, N-B3; 9 Q-R4!, 0-0; 10 N-KB3± (analysis by Euwe).

6 0-0 7 N-B3

Here also 7 Q-N3 is stronger, e.g.: 7 . . . P-B4!; 8 P-Q5, P-K4; 9 P-K4, P-Q3; 10 KN-K2!, Q-K1; 11 0-0, PxP; 12 NxP, NxN; 13 BxN, Q-R4; 14 QR-K1, N-Q2; 15 B-N2, N-B3; 16 P-B3± (Najdorf-Bronstein, Saltsjobaden Interzonal, 1948).

7 N-K5 8 0-0

With the White queen's bishop on QB1, 7 NxN, PxN; 8 N-Q2 would compel Black to make an awkward concession; that this line is not available now is one of the more subtle points to the maneuver . . . B-N5ch-K2.

8 P-QN3

For 8 . . . B-B3, see the previous game.

9 Q-B2 B-N2 10 N-K5 NxN 11 BxN

On 11 BxB, NxPch; 12 K-N2, NxQP; 13 Q-Q3, QN-B3; 14 NxN, NxN; 15 BxR, QxB, Black has excellent compensation for the exchange.

11 BxB 13 P-Q5 P-Q3 15 K-R1  
12 KxB Q-B1 14 N-Q3 P-K4

To answer 15 . . . P-B5 with 16 PxP, PxP; 17 R-KN1.

15 P-B3 16 Q-N3

Necessary to prevent 16 . . . PxP; 17 PxP, Q-B5! with good counterplay.

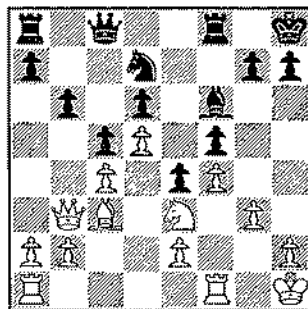
16 K-R1 17 P-B4 P-K5 18 N-N4! P-B4

Obviously forced, to prevent the knight from settling on Q5.

19 N-B2 N-Q2 20 N-K3 B-B3

Deliberately provoking the sacrifice; after 20 . . . N-B3, White would have proceeded to open lines on the king-side by P-KR3-N4, after due preparation, and Black would have had to sit back and watch. From the practical point of view, therefore, his move can hardly be criticized.

# ALEKHINE



# EUWE

21 NxP!      BxB      23 NxP      B-B3  
22 NxQP      Q-N1      24 N-Q2      P-KN4

Both players had doubtless foreseen this position, and appraised it somewhat differently. Certainly White has the better practical chances, but, with constant vigilance, Black ought to be able to hold his own.

25 P-K4 PxP      27 P-K5 Q-K1      29 N-B3  
26 PxP B-Q5      28 P-K6 R-KN1

Of course not 29 PxN, Q-K7, when Black recovers the piece advantageously.

29      Q-N3      30 R-KN1!

After 30 N-N5, N-K4!; 31 QR-Q1 (what else?), P-KR3; 32 Q-KR3, NxP, Black has enough counterplay for three games.

30      BxR      31 RxB Q-B3(?)

With 31 . . . Q-B4! Black has an easier time: 32 PxN (32 N-N5, P-KR3), RxRch; 33 KxR, QxP/2. With the Black queen on B3, White has a big check on KR3, or even Q3—see the next note.

32 N-N5 R-N2

On 32 . . . P-KR3, White's simplest is 33 PxN, PxN; 34 Q-R3ch, K-N2; 35 RxPch. There is also a delightful analysis by William Winter: 32 . . . P-KR3; 33 N-B7ch, K-R2; 34 Q-Q3ch, R-N3; 35 N-K5, NxN; 36 PxN, Q-N2; 37 P-Q6, Q-N2ch; 38 Q-Q5, QxQch; 39 PxQ "and the mass of White pawns is irresistible."

33 PxN RxP?

And now 33 . . . QxBP!; 34 Q-QB3, Q-Q5; 35 QxQch, PxQ; 36 N-K6, RxP is a probable draw.

34 Q-K3      R-K2      36 Q-K5      QxQ  
35 N-K6      R-KB1      37 PxQ      R-B4

The exchange sacrifice 37 . . . RxN; 38 PxR, R-K1; 39 R-K1, RxP; 40 K-N2 etc. offers no chances.

38 R-K1

Kmoch has shown that 38 R-N5 also wins, but the text is just as good.

38      P-KR3

After 38 . . . K-N1; White has 39 K-N2, R-K1; 40 K-N3, P-KR4; 41 P-KR4, R-K2; 42 K-N2, R-K1; 43 R-K3, R-K2; 44 R-N3ch followed by 45 R-N5.

39 N-Q8 R-B7      42 P-K7 P-N4      45 R-K6ch K-N4  
40 P-K6 R-Q7      43 N-Q8 K-N2      46 N-Q6 RxKP  
41 N-B6 R-K1      44 N-N7 K-B3      47 N-K4ch Resigns

Two points down with only four games to go, Alekhine's position was all but hopeless. He actually came back to win the twenty-seventh game, but the next three were drawn, and so the final score was +9-8=13 in Euwe's favor: there was now a new world champion.

There could hardly have been a greater contrast between Euwe and his two immediate predecessors. A modest, scholarly man, his activities on behalf of chess in general and Dutch chess in particular have helped immeasurably to popularize the game (Holland, despite its size, now has more serious chessplayers than any other country of Western Europe, thanks largely to him). In 1971 at the age of seventy he was elected president of *FIDE*, and is at the time of this writing utilizing the powers of his office and his own immense personal prestige to effect a higher degree of harmonious cooperation in international chess than ever before.

The most important chess event held during his brief reign as world champion was the tournament held at Nottingham in August 1936. In it Euwe, three previous world champions,—Alekhine, Capablanca, and Lasker, who had returned to competition in 1934, at the age of sixty-six—and future world champion Botvinnik all took part, and the result, a tie for first between Capablanca and

Botvinnik (both at 10-4; Euwe, Fine and Reshevsky were third through fifth, with 9½-4½, Alekhine sixth with 9-5, Flohr and Lasker seventh and eighth with 8½-5½), had a twofold influence on future play for the world championship. First, Capablanca's showing served to remind people that he was still a prime candidate for a world title match, and at the general meeting of the British Chess Federation in October 1936 a resolution was passed recommending that *FIDE* endorse a match between Capablanca and the winner of the Euwe-Alekhine return. In 1937 a subcommittee of *FIDE* recommended the same and thus it was something of a surprise when that august body assembled in Stockholm in the winter of 1938 and recognized as the official challenger—Salo Flohr.

One of Euwe's first actions as world champion was to recognize the authority of *FIDE* in the selection of his next challenger should he win a return match against Alekhine; it was an act of pure generosity on his part, which it was hoped, but not expected, that Alekhine would emulate. He didn't, and his reconquest of the title in 1937 delayed *FIDE*'s power to administer it by about ten years.

A second effect of the results at Nottingham was that, because of Botvinnik's victory, it became a prime goal of the Soviet chess organization to secure him a shot at the title. The jubilation at Botvinnik's success throughout the Soviet Union seems out of proportion until one remembers that it was an avowed goal of Soviet society to catch up with and ultimately to surpass the Western countries in virtually all departments of life (that's what the earliest Five Year Plans were all about) and it was in chess, with Botvinnik's victory at Nottingham, that they first succeeded. The Russians were also disappointed when Alekhine regained his title; they had been denouncing him as a renegade and as a Fascist since 1934, and found the prospect of negotiating with him unattractive, to say the least.

Alekhine did, nevertheless, regain his title; to do it, he gave up, temporarily, both drinking and smoking, and came into the match in better physical and mental trim than he had been in for years. In the first game, however, begun on October 5, 1937 at The Hague, Euwe, playing White sprang a new move in a familiar position and won easily: 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 N-KB3, N-B3; 4

N-B3, PxP; 5 P-QR4, B-B4; 6 N-K5, QN-Q2 (*For 6 . . . P-K3, see the following game.*); 7 NxP/4, Q-B2; 8 P-KN3, P-K4; 9 PxP, NxP; 10 B-B4, KN-Q2; 11 B-N2, P-B3 (*In the first match-game, 1935 Euwe, as Black, played 11 . . . B-K3, but after 12 NxN, NxN; 13 0-0, B-K2; 14 Q-B2, threatening both 15 N-Q5 and 15 N-N5-Q4, White had the advantage.*); 12 0-0, R-Q1; 13 Q-B1, B-K3; 14 N-K4! (*the new move, which Euwe attributes to the Estonian master J. Turn; in the twenty-first game of the 1935 match, Alekhine—White—played 14 NxN, but after 14 . . . NxN; 15 P-R5, P-QR3; 16 N-K4, B-QN5 had nothing.*), B-QN5; 15 P-R5, 0-0; 16 P-R6, PxP? (*16 . . . P-QN3!*; 17 NxN, NxN; 18 Q-K3±); 17 NxN, NxN; 18 N-B5, BxN; 19 QxB, P-N4; 20 B-K3, B-Q4; 21 RxP, BxB; 22 KxB, R-B2; 23 KR-QR1, Q-Q3; 24 QxQ, RxQ; 25 RxRP, RxR; 26 RxR, N-B5; 27 B-B5, R-K3; 28 B-Q4, RxP; 29 BxP, P-N5; 30 K-B1, R-B7; 31 R-N7ch, K-B1; 32 RxNP, NxP; 33 BxN, RxB; 34 R-QB4, and White had no difficulties in the ending.

In the second game, another Slav Defense of theoretical interest, Alekhine evened the score:

### Slav Defense

*White:* Alekhine *Black:* Euwe 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 N-KB3, N-B3; 4 N-B3, PxP; 5 P-QR4, B-B4; 6 N-K5 (*The alternative 6 P-K3 was also tried in this match, the thirteenth game going 6 . . . P-K3; 7 BxP, QN-Q2; 8 Q-K2, N-K5; 9 0-0, B-QN5; 10 B-Q3, BxN; 11 BxN, B-QN5; 12 BxB, PxP; 13 P-Q5, to White's advantage.*), P-K3; 7 B-N5 (*The wild 7 P-B3, B-QN5; 8 B-N5 was tried in the fourth game; play continued 8 . . . P-B4; 9 PxP, Q-Q4; 10 QxQ, PxQ; 11 P-K4, PxP; 12 NxP/4, 0-0; 13 BxN, PxP; 14 0-0-0, PxP and now 15 N-Q6 would have been in White's favor. Also to be considered here is 8 P-K4, BxP; 9 PxP, NxP—Reshevsky-Smyslov, World Championship tournament, The Hague, 1948, continued 10 B-Q2, QxP; 11 NxN, QxNch; 12 Q-K2, BxBch; 13 KxB, Q-Q4ch; 14 K-B2, N-R3 and now the best move is 15 NxP/4±; the game ended in a draw.*), B-QN5; 8

NxP/4, Q-Q4; 9 BxN (9 N-K3, Q-R4; 10 NxB, QxN=), QxN (9... PxB; 10 N-K3, Q-R4; 11 Q-N3±); 10 Q-Q2, PxB; 11 P-K4, Q-N6; 12 PxB, N-Q2; 13 PxP, PxP; 14 B-K2, 0-0-0; 15 0-0=, P-K4; 16 PxP, NxP; 17 Q-B1, BxN (17... KR-N1!; 18 N-K4, N-B6ch; 19 BxN, QxB; 20 N-N3, Q-N5=); 18 PxB, KR-N1; 19 Q-K3, K-N1; 20 P-N3, R-Q2; 21 QR-N1, Q-B7; 22 KR-K1, Q-Q7; 23 QxQ, RxQ; 24 P-KB4, N-N3; 25 B-B4, KR-Q1; 26 R-K6, KR-Q3; 27 QR-K1, K-B2; 28 RxR, RxR; 29 P-R4, K-Q2; 30 K-B2, N-K2; 31 K-B3, N-Q4? (31... P-KB4; 32 P-KR5!±); 32 B-Q3!+-, P-KR3; 33 B-B5ch, K-Q1; 34 K-N4!, N-K2; 35 B-N1, K-K1; 36 K-R5, K-B2; 37 B-R2ch, K-B1; 38 KxP, R-Q7; 39 B-K6, R-Q6; 40 P-N4, RxP; 41 P-N5, Resigns

After two draws, Euwe again took the lead by winning the fifth game, but in the sixth, Alekhine sprang an opening innovation as early as the sixth move; the result was all he could have hoped for:

#### SLAV DEFENSE

**White: Alekhine Black: Euwe**

1 P-Q4 P-Q4 2 P-QB4 P-QB3 3 N-QB3 PxP

After 3... N-B3, White has nothing better than to transpose into more usual channels by 4 N-B3 (4 PxP, the *Exchange Variation*, is of course also playable). The text is more ambitious.

4 P-K4 P-K4

The alternative, 4... P-QN4, is better for White after 5 P-QR4, P-N5; 6 N-R2, N-B3; 7 P-K5, N-Q4; 8 BxP.

5 BxP

Slightly more accurate is 5 N-B3, but after 5... PxP; 6 QxP, QxQ; 7 NxQ, N-B3! Black can equalize.

5 PxP

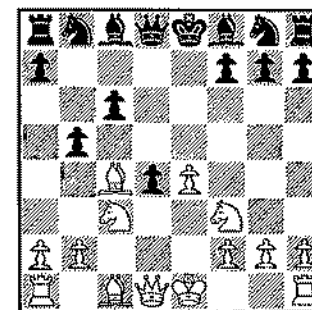
And not 5... QxP?; 6 Q-N3, Q-Q2; 7 B-KN5±.

6 N-B3?!

"Putting before Black a most difficult practical problem..." (Alekhine).

6 P-QN4?

EUWE



ALEKHINE

The solution to which is 6... PxN!; 7 BxPch, K-K2; 8 Q-N3, PxP; 9 BxP, Q-N3!±. The text loses.

7 NxNP! B-R3

Now 7... PxN loses the exchange to 8 B-Q5.

8 Q-N3 Q-K2

And not 8... BxN; 9 BxPch, K-Q2; 10 NxP++.

9 0-0 BxN

10 BxB N-B3 11 B-QB4 QN-Q2 12 NxP

In the book of the match, Alekhine's note to this move reads: "Some critics claimed that 12 P-K5 was 'more energetic.' I am sure that had I made that move the same critics would have said that '12 NxP was simpler.' As a matter of fact I did not see anything immediately decisive after 12 P-K5, NxP; 13 NxN, QxN—and after the text move White has a pawn more and a tremendous position." When the game appeared in the second volume of his collected games, this note was replaced by one that simply points out that 12 P-K5 was another way to win: 12... NxP; 13 NxN, QxN; 14 Q-N7, R-QN1; 15 QxKBPch, K-Q1; 16 QxRP. Throughout his commentary on the games in the book of the match, Alekhine is on the attack against anonymous "critics" who seem determined to misunderstand his every move.

12 R-QN1 13 Q-B2 Q-B4 14 N-B5

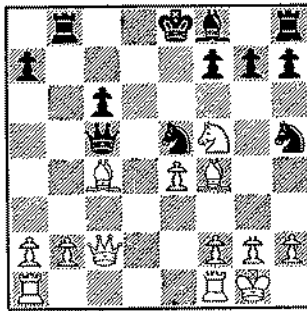
And not 14 NxP?, R-B1.

14 N-K4 15 B-B4!

On 15 NxPch, Black has 15... K-Q1! (15... BxN?; 16 BxPch), winning a piece.

15 N-R4

EUWE



ALEKHINE

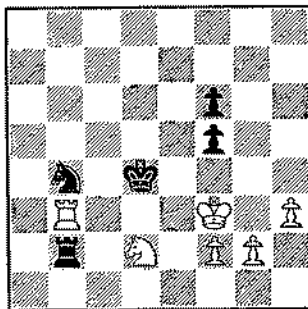
16 BxPch!      KxB      18 BxN      R-N4  
 17 QxQ      BxQ      19 B-Q6

With the threat of 20 P-QR4.

19      B-N3      21 QR-Q1    P-B4      23 R-Q5!    Resigns  
 20 P-QN4!    R-Q1      22 PxP      BxP

When Alekhine also won the seventh and eighth games, he was in full command. It wasn't until the fourteenth game that Euwe was able to score another victory, and that only because Alekhine for once faltered in an endgame where he had excellent chances to salvage a draw. In the following position,

EUWE



ALEKHINE

Alekhine (Black) played 58 . . . RxRch?, and lost shortly (59 NxRch, K-K4; 60 P-N3, N-B3; 61 P-R4, N-Q1; 62 N-B5, N-B2; 63 N-Q3ch, K-Q5; 64 N-K1, K-K4; 65 N-Q3ch, K-K3; 66 K-B4, N-Q3; 67 K-B4, K-B2; 68 N-N3!, Resigns). Instead 58 . . . RxN; 59 RxNch, K-K4, although obviously not without chances for White, would have offered enormous technical difficulties. The position is noteworthy because it represents one of the very few chances Alekhine missed in the course of the match.

In the match itself, Euwe was able to win only two more games, and the final score was +10—4=11. The twenty-fifth game shows Alekhine as hungry for victory as he was at the start:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

White: Euwe Black: Alekhine 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, O-O; 5 N-K2, P-Q4; 6 P-QR3, B-K2; 7 PxP, PxP; 8 N-N3, P-B4; 9 PxP, BxP; 10 P-N4? P-Q5!; 11 PxB, PxN; 12 Q-B2, Q-R4; 13 R-QN1, B-Q2; 14 R-N3, B-R5; 15 QxP, Q-Q1!; 16 B-B4, N-R3!; 17 BxN, PxB; 18 O-O, BxR; 19 QxB, R-N1; 20 Q-B2, Q-Q4; 21 P-K4, Q-N6; 22 Q-K2, Q-N4!; 23 Q-B3, QxP; 24 N-B5?, R-N8; 25 Q-B4, NxP; 26 P-KR4, R-K1; 27 R-K1, Q-B6; 28 R-Q1, N-Q7!; 29 RxN, RxBch; 30 K-R2, Q-B2; 31 R-Q6, R-B4; 32 P-N3!, R-KB1!; 33 P-N4, P-B3; 34 K-R3, P-KR4; 35 Q-Q2, PxPch; 36 KxP, Q-B2; 37 P-R5, RxN!; 38 KxR, QxPch; 39 K-B4, Q-R5ch; 40 K-B3, Q-R6ch; 41 K-K4, R-K1ch; 42 K-Q5, Q-N6ch; 43 K-Q4, QxP; Resigns

After the match was over, Alekhine and Euwe also played a series of five exhibition games; Euwe won two, Alekhine one, and two were drawn.

Euwe himself explains the debacle of the second match with reference to his own psychology. Alekhine was at the best of times a difficult opponent to face, wholly apart from the moves he was making on the board. Botvinnik has given us a vivid picture of what it was like, from his experience in the Nottingham tournament of 1936:

At the board Alekhine was so direct that, as he thought out some combination, he was unable to restrain his feelings. When

the position was complex, after making his move he would get up and start circling round and round the table like a kite. . . . At the critical point, in my search for escape I had to spend some 20 minutes in thought, and all that time Alekhine circled round and round our table. Summoning all my will power, I managed to free myself of this strong "psychological" pressure and find a way out of the trap. [M. M. Botvinnik, *One Hundred Selected Games*]

Euwe relates that during the first match, he was more amused than anything else that the world's best player needed to resort to such shoddy tricks against him, but during the second, when he was the man in possession, they began to take their toll. Doubtless this goes some way to explain, if not the result of the second match, then at least the one-sidedness of the score.

Had Euwe won the return match, control over selection of his next challenger would have passed to *FIDE*. As it was, Alekhine almost immediately opened negotiations with Capablanca, with the Soviets for a match against Botvinnik (probably moved by a desire to return under safe conduct to his homeland), and later with the "official" challenger Flohr. To add to the confusion, in the summer of 1938 the General Dutch Broadcasting Company (better known by its acronym of AVRO) arranged for a double round-robin tournament, to be played in each of several Dutch cities in turn, among Alekhine and his seven most likely challengers. It was mid-way through the tournament before Alekhine announced that he would not, after all, feel obliged to meet the tournament winner in a title match, but the result, a tie for first between Keres and Fine (Keres was declared the winner because in his two games against Fine he had won one and drawn the other), brought at least one more likely opponent to the fore from among those that the world champion would need eventually to select his next challenger. He had still not yet made his selection when, on September 1, 1939, Germany invaded Poland.

## 6

# *The World Championship Tournament of 1948*

THERE was far more chess activity during the Second World War than during the First, for two reasons. One was that the Hitler government, in an effort to foster an illusion of cultural continuity, sponsored a number of tournaments both in Germany itself and in the occupied countries, and the other was that in the Soviet Union tournaments were held even in the darkest days, sometimes, as with the 1943 Moscow championship, almost as an act of defiance against the Nazi guns that were at the same time shelling the city.

Meanwhile, in the United States, the biggest items of chess news were the deaths of two former world champions. First, on January 11, 1941, Emanuel Lasker died in New York City at the age of seventy-two. In 1934, driven from his native Germany by the rise of Hitler to power, he had begun to play competitive chess again, with astonishing success for a man his age: at Nottingham, 1936, he had tied for seventh and eighth places with Flohr, but only 1½ points behind the first-prize winners. He had settled in Moscow for a time, but then migrated to the United States, where he had lectured and given simultaneous exhibitions until his last illness.

Far more unexpected was the sudden death, in the quarters of the Manhattan Chess Club on Central Park West, on April 8, 1942, of José Capablanca; he was only fifty-four. Since his comparative failure at the AVRO tournament he had played very little; his last appearance was at first board for the Cuban team in the 1939



Olympics at Buenos Aires. In a career spanning, all told, more than forty years, he had lost, in tournament and match play, the grand total of thirty-five games—an amazing record.

The principal ornament of the Nazi chess program throughout the war years was Alexander Alekhine. (Paul Keres also participated in some German-sponsored tournaments, but not Max Euwe, despite repeated efforts to induce him to do so.) His results, against mostly weak opposition, and certainly his play, were disappointing, although he usually took first prize (in Munich, 1941, he tied for second, at Gijon, 1945, he came third, and at Navidad, 1945, second; he came first, or tied for first, eleven times). In several tournaments in Spain during the last year of the war it became obvious that his powers had appreciably declined.

In the Soviet Union, strenuous efforts were made to ensure that the chess program would continue, despite often appalling conditions. Primarily, it was deemed important to carry on for much the same reason that baseball continued throughout the war in this country—to help boost morale—but also it was hoped that, when international play was resumed after the war was over, a well-trained Soviet contingent would be in excellent position to assert themselves *en masse*. Botvinnik, it had been decided long before, was to become world champion, but also some younger players—Vassily Smyslov, for instance, who had tied for first place in the 1938 Moscow Championship, or Alexander Kotov, who had come up from nowhere to place second in the XI (1939) Soviet Championship—looked very promising.

The XII (1940) Soviet Championship, held in Moscow, also saw some new faces at the top: a virtual unknown named Igor Bondarevsky tied for first with the Hungarian emigré Andreas Liliental, who had remained in Moscow after the 1935 international tournament, and had become a Soviet citizen in 1939. Smyslov was third; Keres, who had become a Soviet citizen perforce when the Balkan States were annexed in 1940, fourth; and another newcomer, Isaac Boleslavsky, fifth. Botvinnik, unbelievably, was sixth.

In the next year, these same six players met in a match-tournament (each participant played four games against each of the others), the first half in Leningrad, the second in Moscow, for what was called the Absolute Championship of the USSR. One of the objectives of this tournament was to give the top Soviet players

match experience with an eye to the world championship, and since in 1948 three of them were to play for the world title in an event of like kind, the Leningrad-Moscow tournament proved invaluable. In it, the results of the XII Soviet Championship were neatly reversed: Botvinnik won, followed by Keres, Smyslov, Boleslavsky, Liliental, and Bondarevsky, in that order.

It was at about the same time as the Leningrad-Moscow tournament that a series of articles appeared in the *Deutsche Schachzeitung* (April, May, and June 1941) over the signature of Alexander Alekhine. The nature of these articles, characterized by their English translator as “vitriolic” and “hysterically incoherent,” is obvious from the titles: the first, in two parts, was called “Jewish and Aryan Chess,” and the second the “Aryan Concept of Attack” (as opposed to the “Jewish” concept of defense). The best argument in support of Alekhine’s later contention that the articles were forgeries is that, wholly apart from their being hateful, they are utterly inane, but Alekhine’s denial that he was the author was not enunciated until March 1946; by that time, the movement to ostracize him had already gained considerable support. An invitation to the tournament at London in January of 1946 was withdrawn at the insistence of the United States federation, and there were suggestions from several quarters that he be somehow stripped of his title.

Alekhine defended himself in an open letter to the editor of the Australian magazine *Chess World*, in which he stated that “of the articles which appeared in 1941 during my stay in Portugal . . . *nothing was actually written by me.*” He claimed that the Nazis had blackmailed him into silence and further participation in their chess program through threats to his wife—“if the charge of ‘collaboration’ is based on my forced sojourn in Germany, I have nothing to add—my conscience is clear.”

Unhappily, the letter also contains certain demonstrable falsehoods:

Having devoted my life to chess, I have never been concerned in anything not concerned with my profession. But unfortunately for me, throughout my life—and especially since I gained the world title—people have sought to present me in an absolutely fantastic political light. For more than twenty years

I was labeled a "White Russian." This was particularly damaging as it made impossible contact with my native country, which I have never ceased to love and admire. [Quoted in I. A. Horowitz and P. L. Rothenberg's, *The Personality of Chess*]

The Soviets, although willing enough to bargain with Alekhine—he had something they wanted, after all—were not likely to forget that in 1929 he had made a speech to the Russian emigré colony in Paris, denouncing the USSR; they had in turn denounced him as a Nazi sympathizer as early as 1934.

Nevertheless, in February 1946, Botvinnik sent a challenge to Alekhine through the agency of the British Chess Federation, to a match for the world title to take place in England sometime in 1947. Alekhine accepted, and was in Lisbon preparing for that match when, on March 24, 1946, he was found dead in his hotel room, presumably of heart failure.

It was also in 1946 that *FIDE* resumed its activities. Before the war, the Soviets had spurned invitations to join the international federation, condemning it as "bourgeois," but when it became obvious that *FIDE*'s attempts to gain administrative powers over the world championship were destined to succeed, they reversed themselves and sent delegates to the meetings in July and August of 1947, when plans for the championship tournament were finally approved.

It had already been suggested in July 1946, after a Dutch proposal to declare Max Euwe champion *ad interim* was narrowly defeated, that a match-tournament should be held in Holland the following summer with six participants: Euwe, Botvinnik, Keres and Smyslov (or any three players nominated by the USSR), and Fine and Reshevsky (or any two players nominated by the United States). Provision was also made to admit the winners (if not already included) of the forthcoming tournaments at Groningen and Prague; as it turned out, Botvinnik won at Groningen, and the Prague tournament was declared too weak to warrant the inclusion of the winner, Mendel (later Miguel) Najdorf—a decision that incurred some criticism.

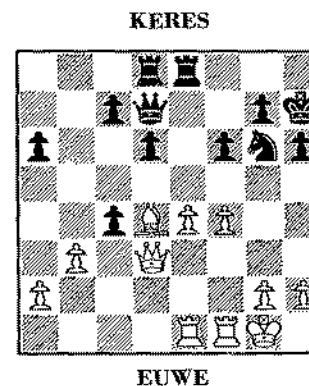
In 1947 the plans were modified to allow the second half of the tournament to be held in Moscow, and further altered when, at

the last minute, Fine withdrew under the pressure of his medical studies. Although Najdorf was still waiting in the wings, it was simply decided that the five remaining original players would play five games, instead of four, against each opponent.

The first part of the tournament was held at the Dierentuin (Town Hall) of The Hague, beginning March 2, 1948. The Russians arrived in strength: Botvinnik, Keres, and Smyslov, of course, and their seconds, Ragozin, Tolush, and Alatortzev, respectively; Bondarevsky, Flohr (now a Soviet citizen), and Liliental as correspondents; Kotov as a member of the adjudication committee. Reshevsky arrived alone, and the Dutch player Prins was hastily found to second him. Euwe's second was van Scheltinga.

Botvinnik, on the strength both of his prewar record and his victory at Groningen, was the favorite, and the capabilities of Reshevsky and Keres were also well appreciated. Smyslov and Euwe were unknown quantities: Smyslov because he was so little known in the West (his only international appearances up till that time were at Groningen, where he was third, and at Warsaw, 1947, where he tied for second), and Euwe because after his second-place finish at Groningen he had had some miserable results. He was also at the age of fifty-four much the oldest of the competitors.

At a little after five o'clock in the evening of March 2, Burgomester Visser of The Hague played 1 P-K4, as directed by Euwe, against Keres, and play began. Euwe got a promising position out of the opening, but later made some indifferent moves and allowed Keres to equalize. Then, in the following position (after 27 . . . Pxp)



he blundered with 28 QxP?, allowing 28 . . . RxP! with advantage to Black. Keres conducted the remainder of the game in grand style: 29 RxR, P-Q4; 30 QxRP, PxR; 31 B-K3, Q-N5; 32 Q-B4, R-Q6!; 33 B-B1, N-R5!; 34 QxPch, P-B4; 35 Q-N7, P-B3; 36 QxP, R-QB6; 37 Q-Q5, R-B4!; 38 Q-Q2, RxB and wins (39 RxB, N-B6ch). On the very next move, after 39 P-KR3, Keres missed an immediate win with 39 . . . N-B6ch, but, after 39 . . . Q-N6? was still a piece ahead, and Euwe resigned on the 56th move. Smyslov was at the same time drawing with Reshevsky; Botvinnik had the bye.

In the second round, Keres scored his second win with a whirlwind attack:

### Grunfeld Defense

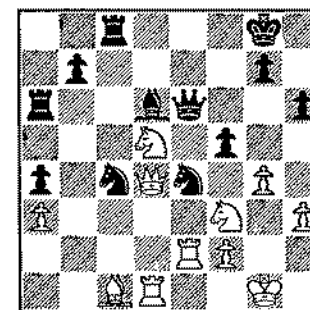
White: Keres Black: Smyslov 1 P-QB4, N-KB3; 2 N-KB3, P-B3; 3 N-B3, P-Q4; 4 P-K3, P-KN3; 5 P-Q4, B-N2; 6 PxP, NxP; 7 B-B4, O-O; 8 O-O, P-N3; 9 Q-N3, NxN; 10 PxN, B-QR3; 11 B-R3, BxB; 12 QxB, R-K1; 13 P-K4, P-QN4; 14 Q-N3, N-Q2; 15 P-B4, R-N1; 16 QR-Q1, Q-R4; 17 P-B5, P-N5; 18 B-N2, P-K4; 19 N-N5, R-K2; 20 P-B4, PxQP; 21 P-B5, NxP; 22 Q-KR3, P-R4; 23 P-B6, B-R3; 24 PxR, BxN; 25 Q-KB3, P-B3; 26 BxP, N-Q2; 27 P-KR4, Resigns

Botvinnik, in his debut, disposed of Euwe in fine style, and it was already obvious that the ex-champion was seriously off-form—when, if ever, he would finally right himself was a recurring question throughout the tournament.

In the third round, Botvinnik narrowly averted defeat when Smyslov muffed the endgame after winning a pawn, and Reshevsky beat Keres by some fine positional play.

When the two leaders met in the fourth round, the result was an extremely tense battle, with both players getting into time trouble as early as the twenty-fifth move. Reshevsky had much the better of it, but in the following position

RESHEVSKY

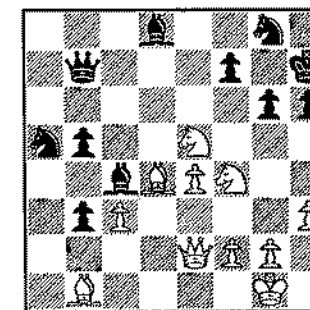


BOTVINNIK

faltered with 28 . . . B-B4?. After 28 . . . N-N4! there are three possibilities. I: 29 RxQ, NxNch; 30 K-N2, NxQ; 31 RxN, PxP; 32 RxP and Black is a pawn ahead; II: 29 NxN, QxR; 30 N-B6ch, PxN; 31 Q-Q5ch, K-R1; 32 N-B7ch, K-R2; 33 N-N5ch, BPxN, and there is no perpetual check, so Black wins; and III: 29 Q-Q3, NxNch; 30 QxN, PxP; 31 PxP, Q-B2, and again Black has an extra pawn. The game continued 29 PxP, QxP? (29 . . . BxQ; 30 PxQ, BxPch; 31 RxB, NxR; 32 KxN, RxP=); 30 QxN/K, QxP; 31 N-R2, R/1-B3; 32 N-B4 and Black overstepped the time limit.

Meanwhile, Euwe had worked up a winning position against Smyslov, but, to the despair of the huge audience, and of course to his own chagrin, muffed the attack:

SMYSLOV



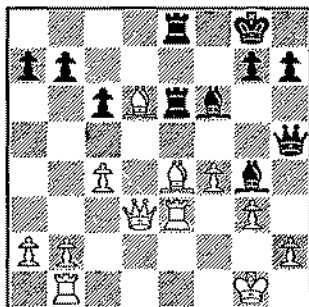
EUWE

here he played 33 N/5xNP, but after 33 . . . PxN (33 . . . BxQ; 34 N-B8mate!), continued with 34 NxP? (34 Q-N4 wins), KxN; 35 P-K5ch, K-B2; 36 Q-R5ch, K-B1; 37 P-B4, B-N3; 38 Q-B5ch, K-K2; 39 Q-R7ch, K-Q1 and resigned after a few more moves.

In the fifth round, the last of the initial lap, Botvinnik beat Keres, and Reshevsky, Euwe (his fourth straight loss), so that the scores were Botvinnik 3½, Reshevsky 2½, Keres and Smyslov 2, and Euwe 0.

The next three rounds saw only one decisive result (Keres defeated Smyslov again in round 7) but the games were all full of fight. Thus, when Reshevsky and Botvinnik met again in the ninth round their positions relative to each other had not altered. Botvinnik once again got into difficulties but, with both players again in time pressure, squirmed out with a temporary sacrifice of the exchange and a weak move on Reshevsky's part:

BOTVINNIK



RESHEVSKY

Botvinnik tried 23 . . . RxQB and play continued 24 QxR, R-Q1; 25 Q-B7, Q-QB4; 26 R-K1, R-QB1; 27 QxNP, B-Q5; 28 K-B2 (28 Q-N3!), BxRch; 29 RxB, Q-Q5; 30 Q-N3, Q-Q7ch; 31 K-N1, Q-B8ch; 32 K-B2; Q-Q7ch; Drawn. Smyslov, meanwhile, was showing off his endgame technique at Euwe's expense, and pulled level with Reshevsky.

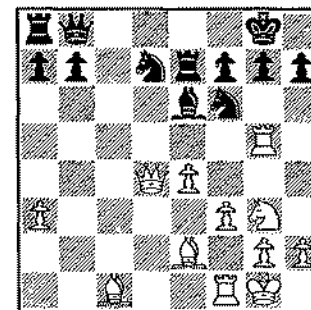
One of Botvinnik's most important assets in this tournament was his continuing mastery of Keres (their score was +3-1=1, and the game Keres won came after Botvinnik had already clinched the

title). It had come in handy before, for instance in the 1941 Leningrad-Moscow match-tournament, where one of Botvinnik's wins over Keres came in 22 moves with the Black pieces. His tenth-round victory here was almost as drastic:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

White: Botvinnik Black: Keres 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, 0-0; 5 P-QR3, BxNch; 6 PxP, R-K1 (In the 1938 AVRO tournament Keres had played 6 . . . P-B4 against Botvinnik: 7 B-Q3, N-B3; 8 N-K2, P-Q3; 9 N-N3, P-QN3; 10 B-N2, B-R3; 11 P-K4, R-B1; 12 R-QB1, PxP; 13 PxP, P-K4; 14 Q-R4, N-QR4; 15 0-0, Q-K1; 16 Q-N4, N-B3; 17 Q-R4, N-QR4; 18 Q-N4, N-B3; 19 Q-Q2, Q-Q1; 20 P-Q5, N-QR4=, That game ended in a draw.); 7 N-K2, P-K4; 8 N-N3, P-Q3; 9 B-K2, QN-Q2; 10 0-0, P-B4; 11 P-B3!, BPxP; 12 BPxP, N-N3; 13 B-N2, PxP; 14 P-K4±, B-K3; 15 R-B1, R-K2; 16 QxP, Q-B2; 17 P-B5, PxP; 18 RxP, Q-B5 (18 . . . Q-Q1; 19 Q-K3±); 19 B-B1, Q-N1; 20 R-KN5, QN-Q2;

KERES



BOTVINNIK

21 RxPch!, KxR; 22 N-R5ch, K-N3; 23 Q-K3, Resigns

Reshevsky, in the tenth round, fell a little further back by drawing with Euwe. The standings after the second lap: Botvinnik 6, Reshevsky 4½, Keres and Smyslov 4, Euwe 1½.

The tournament (by which one of course means a crowd of people and their baggage) then moved on to Moscow, a difficult journey in those troubled times. The party proceeded to the Polish frontier, where it was discovered that the Dutch contingent had not been provided with Polish visas. In the words of Harry Golombek:

Appeal was made to the Polish general in charge of that portion of the frontier, but he sternly replied that nobody had yet passed the Polish frontier without permission (showing an easy forgetfulness of recent history), and that though the Russians might proceed, since they were equipped with the necessary visas, yet the Dutch must stay behind.

It was now that Botvinnik proved invaluable. He telephoned to Moscow explaining the situation, Moscow telephoned back to the Polish general, and the whole party was allowed to go through, visa or no visa. [Harry Golombek, *The World Chess Championship, 1948*]

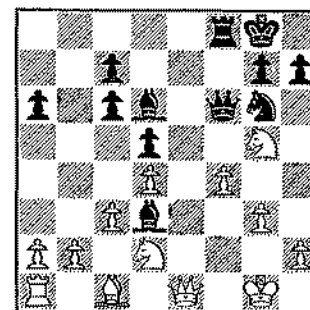
After further difficulties with customs officials at the Russian border, again quickly resolved when Botvinnik telephoned to Moscow, the party arrived, and play began anew on April 11 at the Salle de Colonnes, before even larger crowds than had assembled at The Hague. The spectators were rewarded by two Russian victories, one by Smyslov over Reshevsky, and another sparkling effort by Keres against Euwe:

### Ruy Lopez

*White: Euwe Black: Keres* 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, P-Q3; 5 P-B3, P-B4 (the so-called "Siesta Variation"); 6 PxP, BxP; 7 P-Q4 (The alternative, 7 0-0, has always been the more popular, but the positions arising after 7 . . . B-Q6; 8 R-K1, B-K2; 9 R-K3, P-K5; 10 N-K1, B-N4!; 11 R-R3 are mostly far from clear.), P-K5; 8 N-N5, P-Q4; 9 P-B3, P-K6!? (9 . . . PxP; 10 0-0!±; or 9 . . . P-R3; 10 PxP, PxN; 11 PxB±); 10 P-KB4 (10 BxP, P-R3; 11 N-R3, BxN; 12 PxB, B-

Q3±, Smyslov-Goldberg, Moscow, 1945.), B-Q3; 11 Q-B3 (11 Q-R5ch!—the idea is to compel Black to obstruct his KN3 square with either his pawn or his bishop, so that it is no longer available to his knight—P-N3; 12 Q-B3, Q-B3; 13 QxPch, N-K2; 14 0-0 or 11 . . . B-N3; 12 Q-B3, Q-B3; 13 QxPch, N-K2; 14 Q-K6, both better for White than what happens in the game), Q-B3; 12 QxPch, N-K2; 13 BxNch? (13 0-0, 0-0; 14 N-B3, BxN; 15 RxB, Q-N3; 16 B-Q2, RxP±), 13 PxB; 14 0-0, 0-0; 15 N-Q2? (15 N-B3, BxN; 16 RxB, Q-N3; 17 B-Q2, RxP±), N-N3; 16 P-KN3, QR-K1—+; 17 Q-B2, B-Q6; 18 R-K1, RxRch; 19 QxR,

KERES



EUWE

BxP!; 20 PxP, NxP; 21 QN-B3, N-K7ch; 22 K-N2, P-R3!; 23 Q-Q2, Q-B4; 24 Q-K3, PxN; 25 B-Q2, B-K5; Resigns

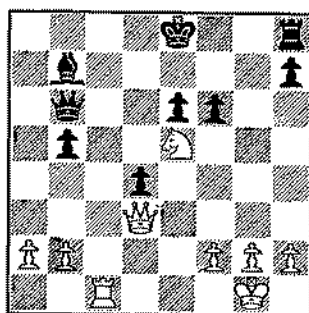
And in the next round, Botvinnik scored yet another brilliancy at Euwe's expense; surely even the jubilant Russians must have been a trifle saddened at the ex-champion's miseries?

### Queen's Gambit Declined

*White: Botvinnik Black: Euwe* 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 N-KB3, N-KB3; 3 P-B4, P-K3; 4 N-B3, P-B3; 5 P-K3, QN-Q2; 6 B-Q3, PxP (Earlier, Euwe had played the Romih Variation—6 . . . B-N5; 7

P-QR3, B-R4; 8 Q-B2, Q-K2; 9 B-Q2, PxP; 10 BxBP, P-K4 against Botvinnik and Reshevsky and had incurred two disasters.); 7 BxBP, P-QN4; 8 B-Q3, P-QR3 (Bent Larsen, the only modern world championship contender who defends this variation, usually plays 8... B-N2; an example: 8... B-N2; 9 P-K4, P-N5; 10 N-QR4, P-B4; 11 P-K5, N-Q4; 12 NxP, BxN; 13 PxP, NxBP; 14 B-N5ch, K-B1; 15 Q-Q4, Q-N3; 16 B-K2, P-KR3; 17 0-0, P-N3; 18 B-Q2, K-N2; 19 QR-B1, QR-QB1; 20 Q-R4?, P-N4!±, Ivkov-Larsen, Candidates' match, 1965); 9 P-K4, P-B4; 10 P-K5 (10 P-Q5!?, P-K4; 11 P-QN3!, P-B5; 12 PxP, B-N5; 13 B-N2!, PxP; 14 B-B2, Q-R4; 15 Q-Q2, 0-0; 16 0-0±), PxP; 11 NxNP, PxN; 12 PxN, Q-N3; 13 PxP, BxP; 14 0-0, N-B4 (14... 0-0; 15 Q-K2, N-B4; 16 BxPch, KxB; 17 N-N5ch, K-N3; 18 Q-N4, P-B4; 19 Q-N3, K-B3?; 20 B-B4!, K-K2; 21 QR-B1, R-R2; 22 KR-K1, B-Q2; 23 P-N4, N-R3; 24 NxP!+++, Kottbauer-Kotov, Prague, 1946, but 19... R-B2; 20 B-B4, P-K4; 21 NxRch, KxN; 22 BxP, Q-N3!—according to Russian analysis); 15 B-KB4, B-N2; 16 R-K1, R-Q1 (16... NxP!; 17 QxN, BxN; 18 QxB, 0-0=); 17 QR-B1, R-Q4; 18 B-K5, BxB (18... 0-0; 19 BxB!, KxB; 20 N-K5, threatening 21 RxN, QxR; 22 Q-N4ch, K-R1; 23 Q-R5; after 20... NxP; 21 QxN, K-R1; P-B3; 23 Q-B4 White stands better); 19 RxB, RxR; 20 NxR, NxB; 21 QxN, P-B3;

EUWE



BOTVINNIK

22 Q-KN3!, PxN; 23 Q-N7, R-B1; 24 R-B7, QxR (24... Q-Q3; 25 RxB, P-Q6; 26 R-R7, Q-Q1; 27 QxKP++); 25 QxQ, B-Q4;

26 QxKP, P-Q6; 27 Q-K3, B-B5; 28 P-QN3, R-B2; 29 P-B3, R-Q2; 30 Q-Q2, P-K4; 31 PxP, PxP; 32 K-B2, K-B2; 33 K-K3, K-K3; 34 Q-N4, R-QB2; 35 K-Q2, R-B3; 36 P-QR4, Resigns

The other twelfth-round game, Keres vs. Smyslov, was drawn.

In the thirteenth round, Botvinnik defeated Smyslov and Keres defeated Reshevsky, both with the Black pieces. Botvinnik's 1½-point lead looked invincible, Keres, Smyslov, and Reshevsky seemed about equal in the struggle for second place, and Euwe was of course destined to finish last. Against Botvinnik, only Reshevsky had been able to put up a respectable showing—he had had a winning position in the game he lost, and much the better of the draw. In their fourteenth-round encounter, he played the best game of his life, and suddenly Botvinnik no longer seemed head and shoulders above the others, but very human and catchable:

#### NIMZO-INDIAN DEFENSE

White: Botvinnik Black: Reshevsky

1 P-Q4	N-KB3	3 N-QB3	B-N5	5 P-QR3
2 P-QB4	P-K3	4 P-K3	P-B4	

Transposing into the Samisch Variation, at the time one of Botvinnik's favorite lines.

5	BxNch	7 B-Q3	0-0
6 PxP	N-B3	8 N-K2	P-QN3

With 8... P-Q3 Reshevsky might have transposed into the game Botvinnik-Keres from the AVRO tournament quoted in the notes to Botvinnik-Keres, p. 125, intending to answer 9 P-K4 with 9... P-K4. The text move inaugurates a different plan.

9 P-K4 N-K1

This move is necessary both to prevent 10 B-N5 and to answer P-B4 with... P-B4. The original idea is attributable to Capablanca: 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, 0-0; 5 B-Q3, P-B4; 6 N-K2, N-B3; 7 P-QR3, BxNch; 8 PxP, P-QN3; 9 0-0, B-R3; 10 P-K4, N-K1, Johner-Capablanca, Carlsbad, 1929.

10 B-K3 P-Q3

Black is better off if he omits this move altogether, and continues with 10... B-R3; the Q3 square might later prove a good one for the king's

knight (compare the game Geller-Smyslov from the Amsterdam Candidates' tournament, 1956, p. 166).

11 0-0

Now 11 N-N3! is stronger: 11... Q-Q2; 12 0-0, B-R3; 13 P-B4, P-B4; 14 Q-R4!, PxKP; 15 BxP, B-N2; 16 P-Q5±, Geller-Furman, XXI Soviet Championship, 1953.

11 N-R4 13 Q-K2 Q-Q2  
12 N-N3 B-R3 14 P-B4 P-B4

With the better game for Black.

15 QR-K1

In view of White's 16th move it is impossible not to criticize this one. With a rook on K1, White threatens a combinative breakthrough with 16 P-Q5, P-N3; 17 PxKP, QxP; 18 PxP, PxP; 19 NxP!, RxN; 20 Q-B3!, B-N2; 21 Q-R3, N-N2; 22 B-Q4 and wins, and in this line it may well prove useful to have the other rook on KB1. The problem, however, is that Black's next, simple move parries the threat and leaves the rook on K1 uselessly placed. For the annotator just to remark "wrong rook" after White's 16th move is obviously inane; the truth is that White would like to have three rooks in such positions to cover all contingencies.

15 P-N3 16 R-Q1

Now if 16 P-Q5, N-N2±. To make this move before an audience of 3,000 people required courage of a very high order.

16 Q-KB2

On 16... Q-R5, White has 17 P-Q5.

17 P-K5

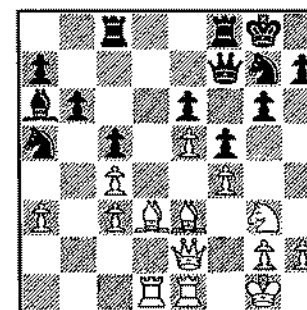
This advance has also been criticized, but anything is better than being compelled to answer 17... R-B1 with 18 R-B1.

17 R-B1 18 KR-K1 PxKP

And not 18... PxQP; 19 BxQP, NxP (19... BxP; 20 PxP, NxP; 21 Q-K5++); 20 PxP, N/1xP; 21 QxP, QxQ; 22 RxQ, N-N7; 23 BxB, NxR; 24 RxN and wins.

19 QPxP N-KN2

RESHEVSKY



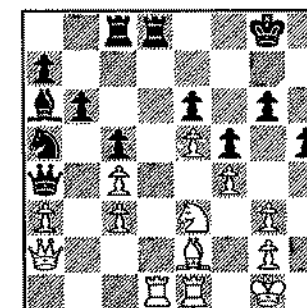
BOTVINNIK

20 N-B1 KR-Q1 22 B-N3 Q-K1 24 Q-R2 NxR  
21 B-KB2 N-R4 23 N-K3 Q-R5 25 PxN P-R4!

No counterplay!

26 B-K2

RESHEVSKY



BOTVINNIK

The long, mostly forced variation 26 B-B2, BxP; 27 BxQ, BxQ; 28 B-Q7, R-N1; 29 R-Q6, K-B2; 30 P-B4, K-K2; 31 KR-Q1, NxP; 32 RxPch, K-B2; 33 R-B6ch, K-N2; 34 NxN, BxN; 35 R/1-Q6, B-B2 leaves Black a clear pawn ahead.

26 K-B2 28 QxQ NxQ  
27 K-B2 Q-N6 29 B-Q3



To prevent the maneuver . . . N-Q7 and . . . N-K5ch; on 29 N-B1 Black proceeds much as in the game.

29 K-K2 30 K-K2 N-R4 31 R-Q2 R-B2

Both players were again in time trouble at this stage, and Reshevsky would hardly be human had he been wholly untroubled by recollections of his earlier games against Botvinnik. In this one, however, his play, in the crucial stages especially, is beyond praise.

32 P-N4

A cute idea: 32 . . . RPxP; 33 R-KR1; Reshevsky ignores it.

32 R/2-Q2! 33 PxBP

Obviously there is no time for 33 P-N5 because of the threat of 33 . . . BxP.

33 NPxP 34 R/1-Q1

Or 34 R/2-Q1, N-N6; 35 R-KR1, K-B2; 36 R/R-N1 (36 RxB, RxB), P-R5; 37 R-KR1, B-N2; 38 R/R-N1, K-N3; 39 R-KR1, P-R6! and wins (40 RxB, RxB is still on).

34 P-R5

Zugzwang.

35 K-K1

Any other piece move permits 35 . . . BxP, and on 35 P-R4, K-B2 White is no better off.

35 N-N6

Winning at least the exchange; the following sacrifice is desperation.

36 N-Q5ch

Hopeless, but 36 R-N2, RxB; 37 RxR, RxR; 38 K-K2, N-B8ch just losses a piece.

36 PxN 38 RxN PxP 40 R-KB2 K-K3  
37 BxP NxR 39 BxR RxB 41 R-B3 R-Q6

42 K-K2 and White resigns.

And in the same round, Euwe scored his only full point of the tournament by beating Smyslov.

These unexpected results brought Reshevsky again level with Smyslov and put Keres only 1½ points behind Botvinnik, but in the next round the two leaders met and Botvinnik won again, this

time after a long rook-and-pawn ending in which Keres probably missed a draw. Reshevsky, doubtless exhausted after his monumental achievement the round before, made a perfunctory draw with Euwe and so at the end of the third lap the scores were: Botvinnik 9, Keres 6½, Reshevsky 6, Smyslov 5½, Euwe 3. Attention now turned to the battle for second place.

In the sixteenth round, Smyslov and Reshevsky drew while Keres beat Euwe, and Keres temporarily led his two rivals by a full point, but Smyslov overtook him with a fine victory in the seventeenth:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

White: Smyslov Black: Keres 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, N-KB3; 4 B-N5, P-B3; 5 P-K3, QN-Q2; 6 PxP, KPxP; 7 B-Q3, B-K2; 8 N-B3, 0-0; 9 Q-B2, R-K1; 10 0-0, N-B1; 11 QR-N1, N-N3; 12 P-QN4, B-Q3; 13 P-N5, B-Q2; 14 PxP, BxP; 15 Q-N3, B-K2; 16 QBxN, BxB; 17 B-N5, Q-Q3; 18 KR-B1, P-KR4; 19 N-K2, P-R5; 20 BxB, PxP; 21 Q-R4, N-K2; 22 R-N7, P-R4; 23 P-KR3, KR-N1; 24 R/1-N1, RxR; 25 RxR, P-B4; 26 R-N5, PxP; 27 N/2xP, R-QB1; 28 N-N3, B-B6; 29 QxKRP, R-B5; 30 P-N4, P-R5; 31 N/N-Q4, BxN; 32 NxP, Q-K4; 33 N-B3, Q-Q3; 34 R-R5, R-B1; 35 RxRP, N-N3; 36 Q-R5, Q-KB3; 37 Q-B5, Q-B3; 38 R-R7, R-B1; 39 R-Q7, P-Q5; 40 RxQP, R-R1; 41 P-QR4, Resigns

Botvinnik, meanwhile, was coasting into the world championship by drawing in this round with Euwe, and in the eighteenth with Smyslov; in the latter game, however, only after hammering away for eighty moves trying to capitalize on an advantage that proved just not quite big enough.

The eighteenth round again saw Reshevsky at his best, this time against a rapidly fading Keres:

### Ruy Lopez

White: Keres Black: Reshevsky 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 0-0, NxP; 6 P-Q4, P-QN4;

7 B-N3, P-Q4; 8 PxP, B-K3; 9 Q-K2 (*This move, rather than the more usual 9 P-B3, became very popular for a while as the result of games played in this tournament.*), N-B4 (*Earlier against Keres, Euwe had tried 9 . . . B-K2, but after 10 R-Q1, 0-0; 11 P-B4, NPxP; 12 BxP, B-QB4; 13 B-K3, BxB; 14 QxB, Q-N1; 15 B-N3, N-R4; 16 QN-Q2, NxN; 17 RxN White had slightly the better of it.*); 10 R-Q1, NxB (*Against Smyslov in the twenty-first round Reshevsky played 10 . . . P-N5, but got an uncomfortable game after 11 B-K3, NxN; 12 RPxN, Q-B1; 13 P-B4, QPxP; 14 PxP, P-R3; 15 QN-Q2, B-K2; 16 N-N3, 0-0; 17 B-B5!.*); 11 RPxN, Q-B1; 12 B-N5 (*In the following round Smyslov played 12 P-B4 against Euwe, and after 12 . . . QPxP; 13 PxP, BxP; 14 Q-K4, N-K2; 15 N-R3, P-QB3; 16 NxB, PxN; 17 QxBP had a big edge. But 12 . . . N-N5! is an improvement.*), P-R3; 13 B-R4, B-QB4; 14 N-B3, P-N4; 15 B-N3, Q-N2; 16 NxQP, 0-0-0!; 17 N-B6, P-KN5; 18 N-K1, N-Q5; 19 Q-B1, P-KR4; 20 B-B4, P-R5; 21 B-K3, P-R6; 22 R-Q2, PxP; 23 QxKNP, N-B6ch; 24 NxN, BxB; 25 RxRch, RxR; 26 N-K1? (*PxB!*), B-Q5; 27 N-Q3, B-KB4; 28 R-K1, P-R4; 29 N-K4, K-N1; 30 P-N4, P-R5; 31 P-QB3 (*N/4-B5!*), BxN; 32 RxB, BxBP; 33 R-K3 (*33 PxB, RxN; 34 QxP, R-Q8ch; 35 QxR, QxR—+.*), QxQch; 34 KxQ, RxN!; 35 RxR, BxP/7; 36 R-Q5, P-QB3; 37 R-Q8ch, K-B2; 38 R-QR8, K-N2; 39 R-KB8, BxP; 40 RxPch, K-N3; 41 P-B4 and White resigns

After this game Reshevsky, Smyslov, and Keres were all tied with 7½, but in the nineteenth round Reshevsky lost to Botvinnik while Smyslov was beating Euwe and so temporarily Smyslov was alone in second place. He had a bye coming up, however, and in the twentieth round Reshevsky pulled even by beating Euwe; Keres, meanwhile, lost his fourth straight game to Botvinnik, so that at the end of the fourth lap the standings were: Botvinnik 12 (and needing only half a point more to clinch the title), Reshevsky and Smyslov 8½, Keres 7½, and Euwe 3½.

In the twenty-first round Smyslov and Reshevsky drew while Keres, after three straight losses, righted himself and beat Euwe; thus he was back to within half a point of second place. The twenty-second round saw the crowning of a new world champion: Botvinnik drew with Euwe on the fourteenth move, his now-

official victory a kind of anti-climax, as it had been obvious since the first lap that he would eventually win. The battle for second, which was providing the tournament with its share of sporting interest, went on apace: Keres and Smyslov drew in a difficult game, putting Smyslov for the moment half a point ahead of his rivals.

The twenty-third round saw Smyslov draw with Botvinnik, very peacefully, and Reshevsky with Keres, only slightly less so. In the twenty-fourth Botvinnik, who had what he wanted and seemed little disposed to fight for more, played the Four Knights' Game with White against Reshevsky, but the American, aware that at the same time Smyslov was beating Euwe, pressed too hard and lost. That gave Smyslov second place.

In the final round Reshevsky and Keres, who had identical scores, both won, Reshevsky in routine fashion against Euwe, who must have been delighted just to see the tournament come to an end, and Keres against Botvinnik, for the first time in his career. That made it Botvinnik 14, Smyslov 11, Reshevsky and Keres 10½, and Euwe 4.

Euwe has called Mikhail Botvinnik "the most versatile champion in the history of chess" and offers the following thoughtful analysis of his style:

Most players feel uncomfortable in difficult positions, but Botvinnik seems to enjoy them. . . . Where dangers threaten from every side and the smallest slackening of attention might be fatal; in a position which requires nerves of steel and intense concentration—Botvinnik is in his element. . . . His method of preparing an attack is very characteristic: when he seems to be completely on the defensive he will be striving hard for a break-through, often through some deep combination. With devastating suddenness he is attacking—and like a master. Surprising switches like this are characteristic of his games, the whole situation changing in a flash. [Euwe, *Meet The Masters*]

Of his personality, however, much less can be said. He is the most private man who ever held the world championship—there are no anecdotes about him worth repeating, certainly no scandalous ones. He seems to have lived a busy and largely successful life,

attaining high competence in his career as an electrical engineer, for which he has more than once been cited by his government, and a still higher level of achievement in chess through high intelligence and rigorous method. He has more than once described his methods of chess training in detail, for the benefit of other Soviet players, but, although it might be relatively easy to imitate the form of Botvinnik's training, to emulate the singlemindedness with which he himself applied it would seem beyond the powers of all but the most dedicated. The method consists in part of a combination of physical activities—outdoor sports of various kinds—with actual chess preparation—analysis of opening variations, studying the games of one's prospective opponents, and so on—and a program of training games:

So now your schemes are worked out; but even that is not enough. Certain of them—those of which you are not absolutely sure—should be tried out in training games. Of course, these games must be played with a partner who will keep them secret, otherwise all your opponents will be as well acquainted with them as you are, and all your opening preparation will be wasted. [Mikhail Botvinnik, *One Hundred Selected Games*]

"These preparatory games," he goes on, "must be resorted to not only in order to try out your opening schemes, but also to give you training in other respects." For years he himself played such games with Ragozin, under a variety of conditions: with the radio blaring, so that he might better tolerate the noise of the tournament hall, with Ragozin puffing away on a cigar and blowing smoke into his face, and so on. To prepare for chess was to prepare for combat, and no possible resource, fair or unfair, of which the enemy might avail himself must be overlooked when plotting one's own campaign.

After the World Championship tournament, however, the greatest battle had been won, and Botvinnik could rest on his laurels for a time while the newly organized machinery to determine his first challenger went into effect. At the 1946 *FIDE* Congress in Switzerland the principle of regular systematic competition for the world title had been established. The world had been divided into eight zones (Western Europe, Eastern Europe, the Soviet Union,

Canada, the United States of America, Central America, South America and Australasia) with the idea that in each zone a tournament should be held to select a number of representatives (how many to be determined by the strength of the players in that zone) to a tournament called, appropriately enough, the Interzonal. Then another tournament, to consist of high scorers in the Interzonal and others seeded for various reasons, should ultimately produce a single challenger to play a match against the world champion, the whole business to take about three years.

At that time, however, chess organization in some of the zones was poor—in Australasia it was almost nonexistent—and in others long-established organizations were beset by a shortage of funds; hence, when the qualifiers assembled at Saltsjobaden, Sweden, in the summer of 1948, two zones (Central America and Australasia) were not represented, and others sent fewer than the number of representatives allowed. The Russians, of course, showed up at full strength, and almost completely dominated the event: the winner, surprisingly, was twenty-four-year-old David Bronstein, at 13½-5½ a full point ahead of second-place László Szabo of Hungary, and further beyond compatriots Boleslavsky (12), Kotov (11½), Liliental (11), Bondarevsky, and Flohr (tied for sixth through ninth with Najdorf of Argentina and Stahlburg of Sweden at 10).

Bronstein, a native of Kiev, got his earliest chess training at the House of Young Pioneers in his home city, and made his way steadily up the ladder, until in 1940 he placed second behind Boleslavsky in the Ukrainian championship. His first major success came when, in 1946, he won the Moscow championship; in the same year he placed third in the XIV Soviet Championship as well. In 1948 he tied for first in the XVI Soviet Championship with Kotov.

Bronstein had already demonstrated that he was a talented combinative player with an active, sometimes bizarre, imagination, but during the Interzonal he showed what he was often to lack in the future—a cool head at times of crisis. His most trying moment at Saltsjobaden came when, during his game against Tartakover, a madman rushed out of the gallery to attack him. When the assailant was apprehended and order restored, Bronstein returned to the matter at hand and polished off his opponent in good style.

The first Candidates' tournament, held in Budapest in the spring

of 1950, was in trouble before it started. Among the seeded players, only Smyslov and Keres could take part; Euwe could not obtain leave from his teaching duties and had to decline his invitation, and the Americans Fine and Reshevsky were excluded because the U.S. State Department had banned travel to Hungary; the so-called cold war was then on in earnest and despite strenuous representations to the government on the part of the U.S. Chess Federation, the ban stuck. At the last moment, Bondarevsky took ill and could not play.

The tournament began on schedule, however—a double round-robin with ten players. In the first go-round Boleslavsky and Keres fought it out for the lead, with Bronstein and Smyslov close behind. Of the new faces, Alexander Kotov seemed to be having the roughest time; he fell victim to two brilliancies in the early rounds, first against Bronstein:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

*White:* Bronstein *Black:* Kotov 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, P-QB3; 4 P-K4, PxKP; 5 NxP, B-N5ch; 6 B-Q2, QxP; 7 BxB, QxNch; 8 B-K2, N-QR3; 9 B-B3, N-K2; 10 BxP, R-KN1; 11 B-B3, QxNP; 12 Q-Q2, QxR; 13 0-0-0, N-Q4; 14 N-B3, QxRch; 15 BxQ, NxR; 16 QxN, K-K2; 17 N-K5, B-Q2; 18 Q-R3ch, P-B4; 19 Q-KB3, QR-Q1; 20 QxPch, K-Q3; 21 Q-B4, QR-KB1; 22 N-B7ch, K-K2; 23 B-R5, B-B3; 24 Q-Q6ch, K-B3; 25 N-R6, R-N8ch; 26 K-Q2, K-N2; 27 N-N4, RxN; 28 Q-K7ch, K-R3; 29 BxR, RxPch; 30 K-K3, R-B8; 31 P-KR4, K-N3; 32 B-R5ch Resigns

And then later to Keres:

### Sicilian Defense

*White:* Keres *Black:* Kotov 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-Q3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, N-KB3; 5 N-QB3, P-QR3; 6 B-K2, Q-B2; 7

B-KN5, QN-Q2; 8 0-0, P-K3; 9 B-R5, Q-B5; 10 NxP, QxN/3; 11 N-Q5, K-Q1; 12 B-N4, Q-K4; 13 P-KB4, QxKP; 14 BxN, BxB; 15 NxN, PxN; 16 BxPch, K-B2; 17 BxR, B-B3; 18 Q-Q2, B-R3; 19 QR-K1, Q-N3; 20 R-K7ch, K-Q1; 21 KR-K1, P-R4; 22 B-Q4, R-R3; 23 Q-B2, B-B1; 24 B-N6ch, K-B1; 25 R-K8ch, BxR; 26 RxBch, K-Q2; 27 RxB, Resigns

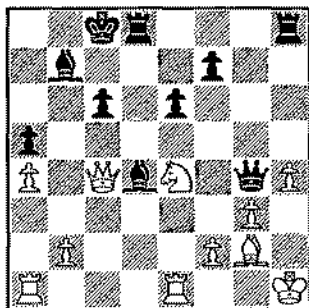
The first tour ended with Boleslavsky at 6-3 half a point ahead of Keres; young Bronstein had been held back by a defeat at the hands of Smyslov:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

*White:* Smyslov *Black:* Bronstein 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-QB3; 3 N-KB3, N-B3; 4 N-B3, P-K3; 5 B-N5 (*The Anti-Meran Gambit, made popular by Botvinnik's famous victory over Arnold Denker in the 1945 U.S.-USSR Radio Match—see below.*), PxP; 6 P-K4 (*In the twenty-fourth game of their 1951 match, Bronstein, as White, played 6 P-QR4 against Botvinnik, with the continuation 6... B-N5; 7 P-K4, P-B4; 8 BxP, PxP; 9 NxP, P-KR3(?); 10 B-K3!, NxP; 11 0-0, N-B3; 12 N/4-N5±, P-N4; 7 P-K5, P-KR3; 8 B-R4, P-N4; 9 NxKNP (The position has already grown very complicated. In addition to the text move, White can try 9 PxN, PxP; 10 N-K5!, QxBP; 11 B-K2, N-Q2! 12 0-0—after 12 NxQBP, B-N2; 13 B-B3, P-R3; 14 0-0, B-N2 Black stands better—NxN; 13 PxN, QxP; 14 B-B3, Q-B2!± or 9 B-N3, N-Q4!; 10 N-Q2, N-Q2; 11 N/2-K4, Q-R4±), PxN; 10 BxNP, QN-Q2; 11 P-KN3 (The Denker-Botvinnik game went 11 PxN, B-N2; 12 B-K2, Q-N3; 13 0-0, 0-0-0; 14 P-QR4, P-N5; 15 N-K4, P-B4!; 16 Q-N1, Q-B2—+.), B-QN2; 12 B-N2, R-KN1 (In the game Liliental-Kotov, XVI [1949] Soviet Championship, 12... Q-N3 was played; there followed: 13 PxN, P-B4; 14 PxP, BxP; 15 0-0, 0-0-0; 16 Q-K2, B-Q5 with about an even position; Bronstein's move is no improvement.)*); 13 BxN, NxR; 14 PxN, QxBP; 15 P-QR4!, P-N5; 16 N-K4, Q-B4; 17 Q-K2, 0-0-0; 18 QxP, B-N2; 19 QxP, BxP; 20 0-0, Q-K4!; 21 K-R1, P-R4; 22 Q-B4, R-R1; 23 KR-K1 (23

QR-B1!, R-Q4; 24 N-B3, R-B4; 25 Q-K2, BxN; 26 QxQ+—), Q-R4? (23 . . . BxBP!; 24 NxB, QxKNP; 25 N-N4, QR-N1; 26 BxP, RxN; 27 BxBch, K-N1!; 28 Q-B8ch!, RxQ; 29 PxQ, KxB; 30 R-K3, R-B7=); 24 P-R4, Q-N5;

# BRONSTEIN



# SMYSLOV

25 Q-K2!, QxQ; 26 RxQ, K-B2; 27 R-QB1, R-Q4; 28 N-B3, R-QB4; 29 R/2-B2, K-N3; 30 N-K4, RxR; 31 RxR, R-Q1; 32 N-Q2!, K-B2; 33 N-B4, R-QR1; 34 P-B4, P-B3; 35 K-R2, P-K4; 36 PxP, PxP; 37 B-K4, B-B1 (37 . . . P-B4; 38 BxB, KxB; 39 K-N2+—); 38 N-R3, B-Q2; 39 N-N5ch, K-N3; 40 NxB, PxN; 41 R-B4, R-QN1; 42 P-QN4!, R-K1; 43 PxBch, K-B2; 44 RxP, P-B4; 45 R-B4, B-B3; 46 BxB, KxB; 47 P-R5, K-Q4; 48 R-B1, R-K5; 49 K-R3, RxP; 50 P-R6; 51 P-R7, R-R1; 52 K-N4, R-R1; 53 R-KR1, P-B5; 54 K-N5, P-B6; 55 K-N6, P-B7; and Black resigns

In the second half of the tournament, Boleslavsky continued well, but Keres faded, and when he incurred an unexpected loss to Kotov in a game where he, for once, went astray in the complications, it was obvious that he was out of it. When, in the final round, Boleslavsky made a quick draw, he was assured of at least a tie for first, and only Bronstein, who was playing Keres, could pull level with him:

# RUY LOPEZ

White: Bronstein Black: Keres

1 P-K4	P-K4	4 B-R4	N-B3	7 B-N3	0-0
2 N-KB3	N-QB3	5 0-0	B-K2	8 P-Q4	
3 B-N5	P-QR3	6 R-K1	P-QN4		

This move has little independent significance; played here, it constitutes one of several ways to avoid the Marshall Gambit (8 P-B3, P-Q4)—but Keres never plays the Marshall Gambit.

8 P-Q3

But not 8 . . . NxQP?; 9 BxPch!, K-R1 (9 . . . RxB; 10 NxP, N-B3; 11 NxR, KxN; 12 P-K5, N-K1; 13 Q-R5ch, K-N1; 14 R-K3+—); 10 NxP±.

9 P-B3 B-N5

If White had played 8 P-B3, after 8 . . . P-Q3, he would, of course, have had the option to play 9 P-KR3, preventing the pin. It is still an open question—although one not raised very often—whether White needs to pause for 9 P-KR3 in order to maintain a lasting initiative.

10 P-KR3

White has some choice here: I: 10 P-Q5, N-QR4; 11 B-B2, P-B3; 12 PxP, Q-B2!; 13 QN-Q2, NxP; 14 N-B1, QR-Q1; 15 P-KR3, B-K3; 16 N-N5, P-Q4! with active play. II: 10 P-QR4, Q-Q2!; 11 P-Q5, N-QR4; 12 B-B2, P-B3; 13 PxP, NxBP; 14 P-KR3, B-R4; 15 QN-Q2, QR-B1!; 16 Q-K2, N-Q5! and Black stands better. III: 10 B-K3—see the game Fischer-Korchnoi, Stockholm, 1962 (p. 202).

10 BxN 11 QxB!?

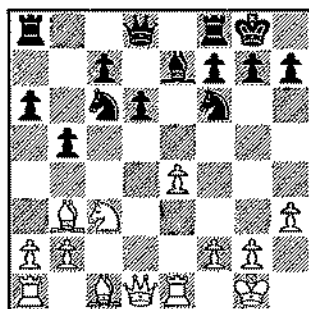
An innovation. After 11 PxB, N-QR4; 12 B-B2, N-R4; 13 P-KB4!, NxP; 14 BxN, PxP; 15 Q-N4, B-R5; 16 QxP, Q-N4ch the position offers White no opportunity for complications (Boleslavsky-Flohr, XVII Soviet Championship, 1949).

11	PxP	12 Q-Q1!	PxP	13 NxP
		13 N-QR4	15 P-B4	P-N5!
		14 B-B2	R-K1	16 N-Q5

Weaker is 16 N-K2, P-Q4; 17 P-K5, N-K5; 18 BxN, PxP; 19 N-N3, B-R5±.

16	NxN	18 Q-Q3	P-N3	20 R-B1	B-N2?
17 QxN	P-B3	19 K-R1	B-B1		

KERES



Position after 13 NXP . . .

BRONSTEIN

After 20 . . . P-Q4!; 21 P-K5, N-B5; 22 P-QN3, N-R6; 23 BxN, PxB Black has a slight edge, according to Botvinnik.

21 B-Q2 P-QB4

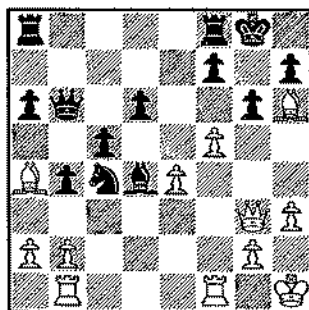
Here too 21 . . . P-Q4 (22 BxP, N-B5) offers more active play. With the text move, Black intends the maneuver . . . N-B3-Q5.

22 B-R4!

Preventing 22 . . . N-B3.

22	R-KB1	24 P-B5!	B-Q5	26 B-R6
23	QR-N1	Q-N3	25 Q-KN3	N-B5

KERES



BRONSTEIN

26

B-N2

On 26 . . . KR-Q1, 27 B-N3! is very strong: 27 . . . N-K4; 28 PxP, RPxP; 29 RxB! with a winning attack, or 27 . . . P-Q4; 28 BxN!, PxB; 29 P-K5 followed by P-K6. Black's best defense is 26 . . . NxB!—one possible line: 27 PxP, RPxP (27 . . . NxB; 28 KRxB!); 28 B-N3, P-B5; 29 RxN, BxR; 30 BxP, P-Q4; 31 BxQP, QR-Q1; 32 QBxR, RxQB; 33 Q-N3, B-K4; 34 BxPch, K-N2 and White's extra pawn is of very little significance (analysis by Kmoeh).

27 BxB KxB 28 P-B6ch K-R1 29 Q-N5! P-N6

After 29 . . . Q-Q1, White wins by 30 R-B4, R-KN1; 31 R-R4, Q-B1; 32 R-R6 followed by Q-R4.

30 PxP Q-N5 31 PxN

And not 31 R-B4, Q-Q7!.

31 QxB 32 R-B4 Q-B7 33 Q-R6! Resigns

It's mate in four.

The 1950 *FIDE* Congress at Copenhagen ruled that Boleslavsky and Bronstein break the tie by a twelve-game play-off match; if the match were tied after twelve games, two more were to be played, then single games, if necessary, until the tie was broken. After fourteen games of a dour struggle, Bronstein emerged as Botvinnik's first official challenger (the final score +3—2=9), in a match of twenty-four games to be played in Moscow in the following year.

# 7

## The Reign of Botvinnik

THE first match ever played for the world championship under the auspices of *FIDE* began in Moscow's Tchaikovsky Salle, a huge concert hall, before a packed house on March 15, 1951. Victory was to go to the first player who scored 12½ points; if the match was tied after twenty-four games, the champion was of course to retain his title. Games were to be played on Fridays, Sundays, and Tuesdays, with adjourned games to be continued on the following day. The time limit was 40 moves in the first two and a half hours, and 16 moves an hour thereafter.

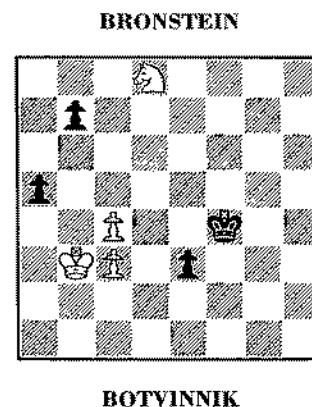
One of the questions on most people's minds at the start was, "How good a match player is Botvinnik?" He had, after all, never won a match—he had drawn two, in 1933 with Flohr and in 1940 with Levenfish—but of course had never lost one. Bronstein had won the only match of his career, against Boleslavsky. It soon became apparent that the two were very much on even terms: the first four games were drawn. Then Bronstein broke the ice in the fifth game:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

*White:* Botvinnik *Black:* Bronstein 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, O-O; 5 B-Q3, P-B4; 6 N-B3, P-QN3; 7 O-O, B-N2; 8 N-QR4, PxP; 9 P-QR3, B-K2; 10 PxP, Q-

B2; 11 P-QN4, N-N5; 12 P-N3, P-B4; 13 N-B3, P-QR3; 14 R-K1, N-QB3; 15 B-B1, N-Q1; 16 B-B4, B-Q3; 17 BxB, QxB; 18 B-N2, N-B2; 19 P-B5, Q-B2; 20 R-QB1, QR-K1; 21 N-QR4, P-QN4; 22 N-B3, P-B5; 23 P-Q5, PxNP; 24 BPxP, PxP; 25 Q-Q4, N-B3; 26 N-KR4, R-K4; 27 RxR, QxR; 28 QxQ, NxQ; 29 N-B5, N-B5; 30 R-Q1, K-R1; 31 R-K1, NxP; 32 N-Q6, B-B3; 33 R-R1, N-B7; 34 RxP, P-Q5; 35 N/3xP, BxB; 36 KxB, N-N5; 37 N-B5, P-Q6; 38 R-Q6, RxN; 39 RxP/7, N/5-K6ch and Black mates next move

In the sixth game, Bronstein again had the initiative, but Botvinnik's defensive resources were just adequate to hold. Then, after a position had been reached in which the draw was obvious, Bronstein committed a memorable blunder:



In this position he played 57 K-B2?? and resigned after he realized the implications of Botvinnik's reply 57... K-N6!; 58 N-K6, P-K7; 59 K-Q2, K-B7 or 58 K-Q1, K-B7 and the pawn queens. Undoubtedly upset at the thought of a half-point chucked away, Bronstein played weakly in the seventh game and the champion took the lead.

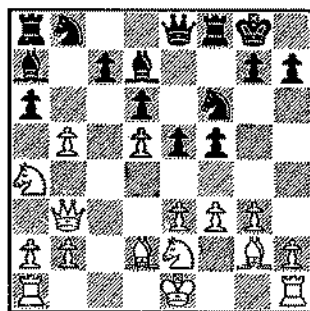
The eighth game was a draw, as was the ninth, but whereas in the former the opening was what is usually called "book," that is, it followed a well-known path far into the middle game, the opening of the latter can only be described as chaotic:



## Dutch Defense

White: Botvinnik Black: Bronstein 1 P-Q4, P-K3; 2 P-QB4, P-KB4; 3 P-KN3, N-KB3; 4 B-N2, B-K2; 5 N-QB3, 0-0; 6 P-Q5 (After 6 P-K3, both 6... P-Q3 and 6... P-Q4 proved sufficient to equalize. The first game, with Botvinnik White, went 6 P-K3, P-Q3; 7 KN-K2, P-B3; 8 0-0, P-K4; 9 P-Q5, Q-K1; 10 P-K4 and now 10... N-R3!, instead of 10... Q-R4 as in the game, would have been good for Black. The twenty-second game, with Bronstein White, went 6 P-K3, P-Q4; 7 KN-K2, P-B3; 8 P-N3, N-K5!; 9 0-0, N-Q2; 10 B-N2, N/2-B3; 11 Q-Q3, P-KN4! with complicated play.), B-N5!; 7 B-Q2, P-K4; 8 P-K3, P-Q3; 9 KN-K2, P-QR3; 10 Q-B2, Q-K1=; 11 P-B3 (Obviously to prepare P-K4 and to prevent... N-N5 or... N-K5; 11 0-0 was widely recommended as better, but invariably with no hint of how White was to play the position subsequently if not with P-B3-K4 at some later stage.), P-QN4!; 12 Q-N3 (12 PxP, PxP; 13 Q-N3, N-R3!), 12... B-B4; 13 PxP, B-Q2 (Perfectly sound, as is also 13... PxP; 14 QxP—14 NxP, Q-B2; 15 N/5-B3, P-B3—, QxQ; 15 NxQ, NxP.); 14 N-R4! (14 PxP, NxP; 15 0-0, P-B5; 16 PxP, PxP; 17 NxP, BxPch++), B-R2? (14... PxP!; 15 NxB, PxN; 16 0-0!, P-QB5; 17 Q-B2, NxP; 18 P-K4, PxP; 19 P-B4! with about even chances; White has an attack for the pawn.);

BRONSTEIN



BOTVINNIK

15 P-N6, BxN (After 15... PxP; 16 NxP, BxN; 17 QxB, NxP; 18 QxP White is just a pawn ahead; the text involves the

sacrifice of a whole rook.); 16 P-N7, BxQ; 17 PxR(Q), B-N3; 18 PxB, Q-N4; 19 N-B3, QxNP; 20 RxP (This is unnecessary: after 20 0-0, QxP; 21 R-R2, Q-N6; 22 R-N1, Q-B5; 23 B-KB1 Black is a full rook down and would probably need to resign "or else lose face" as one annotator put it. But the text move should also win.) NxR; 21 QxN, NxP; 22 Q-R4? (22 NxN!, QxN; 23 K-K2, P-B5; 24 Q-Q3+—), QxQ; 23 NxQ, BxP; 24 B-KB1? (N-B3!), R-R1; 25 P-N3 (25 B-B4, RxN!; 26 BxNch, K-B1 and Black threatens both 27... R-R8ch and 27... BxBch; 28 KxB, R-Q5ch; now Black has full compensation for his piece and the ending is about even.), BxBch; 26 KxB, K-B1; 27 B-Q3, P-N3; 28 R-QB1, R-N1; 29 N-B3, N-N5; 30 B-K2, R-R1; 31 N-R4, P-B3; 32 R-B4, R-N1; 33 B-Q1, K-K2; 34 N-N2, P-Q4; 35 R-R4, P-R4; 36 P-N4, RPxP; 37 PxP, P-B5; 38 P-N5, R-KB1; 39 R-R7ch, K-Q3; 40 R-KN7, P-K5; 41 RxPch, K-K4

Here the game was adjourned, but the players agreed to a draw without resuming play.

The tenth game was also a draw, and then in the eleventh, Bronstein evened the score with what was probably his best effort in the match:

## QUEEN'S INDIAN DEFENSE

White: Botvinnik Black: Bronstein

1 P-Q4	P-K3	4 P-KN3	B-N2	7 P-N3
2 N-KB3	N-KB3	5 B-N2	B-K2	
3 P-B4	P-QN3	6 0-0	0-0	

It is by now widely accepted that the far more usual 7 N-B3 offers little chance for advantage. Of course the text move doesn't offer much either.

7 P-Q4

Also 7... P-B4 is satisfactory: 8 B-N2, PxP; 9 QxP, N-B3; 10 Q-B4, P-Q4; 11 R-Q1, Q-B1; 12 N-B3, PxP; 13 QxP, N-QN5= (Analysis by Pachman).

8 PxP

Or 8 N-K5, P-B4; 9 QPxP, NPxP; 10 PxP, PxP; 11 N-B3, QN-Q2; 12 N-Q3, N-N3; 13 P-QR4, P-QR4; 14 B-QR3, R-B1= (Euwe-Alekhine, Match, 1937.)

8 PXP 10 N-B3 R-K1  
9 B-N2 QN-Q2 11 N-K5

After 11 R-B1, P-B3 Black has already a little the better of it, because of his more flexible position: 12 Q-Q2, N-K5; 13 Q-B2, NxN; 14 BxN, B-Q3; 15 KR-K1, N-B3; 16 N-Q2, B-KB1; 17 B-N2, R-B1; 18 Q-Q3, R-B2; 19 QR-Q1, P-N3 (Levenfish-Botvinnik, first match game, 1937).

11 B-KB1 12 R-B1

The point of this pawn sacrifice is that after safer moves like 12 N-Q3 or 12 P-B4, White has nothing. But the sacrifice is unsound.

12 NxN 14 N-N5 R-K2 16 P-K4  
13 PxN RxP 15 BxN PxB

This second sacrifice is necessary to justify the first: 16 N-Q4, Q-Q2; 17 Q-Q3, P-QB4; 18 N-B5, R-K4; 19 B-R3, Q-B3 is obviously in Black's favor.

16 PXP 17 Q-N4ch B-N2 18 KR-Q1 Q-KB1!

After 18... Q-QB1; 19 Q-B4, White threatens both 20 NxBP and the maneuver N-Q6-B5.

19 N-Q4

To regain one of the pawns by NxBP or RxP would offer White some chances to hold the game, but that is hardly what he had in mind when he went in for all this.

19 B-B1 20 Q-R4 P-KB4 21 N-B6

On 21 B-R3, Black plays 21... BxN; 22 RxB, B-K3 and if 23 Q-N5ch, Q-N2.

21 R-K1 23 R-B2 P-K6! 25 K-R1 B-K3  
22 B-R3 B-KR3 24 PxP BxPch

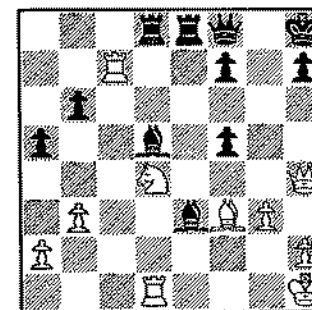
With the threat of 26... Q-R3, swapping queens (26 N-K7ch, RxN; 27 QxR, QxB).

26 B-N2 P-QR4 28 N-Q4 QR-Q1  
27 B-B3 K-R1 29 RxP

The ending after 29 Q-B6ch, Q-N2; 30 QxQch, KxQ; 31 NxBeh, PxN; 32 RxPch, K-N3; 33 R-K1 holds out some drawing chances.

29 B-Q4!

BRONSTEIN



BOTVINNIK

30 R-K1

Analysis by Keres and Tolush shows that both 30 BxB, RxB; 31 R-Q3, R-Q3 with threats of 32... R-K5 and 32... R-R3, and 30 R-KB1, Q-Q3; 31 NxP, BxBch; 32 RxB, Q-Q8ch; 33 K-N2, R-Q7ch; 34 K-R3, RxPch; 35 KxR, Q-N8ch; 36 K-R3, Q-R8ch; 37 K-N4, R-N1ch; 38 K-R5, R-N4ch win for Black.

30 Q-Q3 34 N-B5 Q-N5 38 K-R3 Q-KB7!  
31 R-B2 R-K5 35 RxB R-Q8ch 39 K-N4 P-B3!  
32 BxR BxBch 36 K-N2 R-Q7ch Resigns  
33 QxB PxQ 37 RxR QxRch

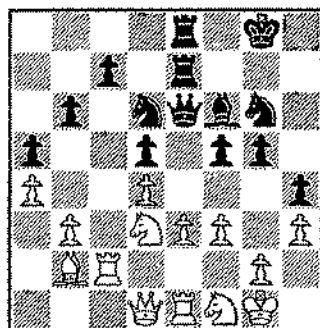
But Botvinnik came right back to win the twelfth game when Bronstein failed to follow up a pawn sacrifice in the most promising way. The next four games were drawn, and then, in the seventeenth, the challenger again tied the score:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

White: Botvinnik Black: Bronstein 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, P-QN3; 5 N-K2, B-R3; 6 P-QR3, B-K2; 7 N-N3, P-Q4; 8 PxP, BxB; 9 NxB, PxP; 10 N-N3, Q-Q2; 11 Q-B3, N-B3; 12 O-O, P-N3; 13 B-Q2, O-O; 14 QN-K2, P-KR4; 15 KR-B1, P-R5; 16 N-B1, N-K5; 17 N-B4, P-R4; 18 R-B2, B-Q1 (18... N-Q1; 19 RxP!, QxR; 20 NxQP, NxB; 21 NxN, Q-Q3; 22

*NxBch, QxN; 23 QxR+-*); 19 B-K1, N-K2; 20 Q-K2, N-Q3; 21 P-B3, P-KN4; 22 N-Q3, Q-K3; 23 P-R4, N-N3; 24 P-R3, P-B4; 25 B-B3, B-B3; 26 R-K1, QR-K1; 27 Q-Q1, R-B2; 28 P-QN3, R/2-K2; 29 B-N2,

# BRONSTEIN



# BOTVINNIK

P-B5; 30 N-K5 (30 *PxP, QxR; 31 NxQ, RxN; 32 Q-Q2, NxP+-*), BxN; 31 *PxB, N-B2; 32 PxP, NxBP; 33 N-R2, P-B4; 34 N-N4, P-Q5; 35 N-B6ch?, QxN; Resigns*

The eighteenth game was perhaps the most complicated and difficult of the entire match, and the outcome (a draw) amply justified:

## QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED

*White: Bronstein Black: Botvinnik*

1 P-Q4 P-Q4 3 N-QB3 N-KB3 5 P-K3 P-QR3  
2 P-QB4 P-QB3 4 N-B3 P-K3

If Black doesn't want to play the Meran System (5... *QN-Q2; 6 B-Q3, PxP*) he has a wide choice of ways to avoid it: 5... *B-N5* (the Romih Variation), 5... *B-K2*, 5... *N-K5* and the text.

6 B-Q3

White usually plays 6 P-B5, e.g. the game Reshevsky-Keres from the 1948 World Championship tournament went 6 P-B5, QN-Q2; 7 P-QN4, P-QR4!; 8 P-N5, P-K4; 9 Q-R4, Q-B2; 10 B-R3, P-K5; 11 N-Q2, B-K2

(11... *P-KN3!*; 12 *B-K2, B-R3=*); 12 B-K2, P-R4; 13 P-N6, Q-Q1; 14 P-R3, N-B1; 15 0-0-0±.

6 P-QN4 8 0-0 B-N2  
7 P-QN3 QN-Q2 9 P-B5 B-K2

The thematic 9... *P-K4* is bad: 10 *PxP, N-N5*; 11 *P-K6, PxP*; 12 *N-Q4, QNxP*; 13 *QxN, NxB*; 14 *QxPch, Q-K2*; 15 *Q-B5±*.

10 P-QR3 P-QR4 13 P-QN4 PxP 16 N-K2  
11 B-N2 0-0 14 PxP Q-B2  
12 Q-B2 P-N3 15 QR-K1 KR-K1

The more aggressive 16 N-K5 is playable because on 16... *NxN*; 17 *PxN, QxP* White has 18 N-K4, winning a piece.

16 B-KB1 17 P-R3

Preventing 17... *P-K4*; 18 *PxP, N-N5*.

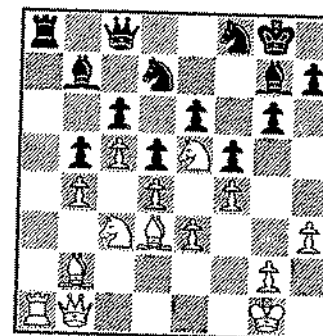
17 B-N2 19 P-B3 N/3-Q2 21 N-B3 R-K2  
18 N-K5 N-B1 20 P-B4 P-B3 22 N-B3 P-B4

Now both players have given up trying to get in *P-K4*, at least for the time being, and turn their attention to the open queen's rook file.

23 R-R1 R/2-K1 25 RxR R-R1  
24 N-K5 RxR 26 Q-N1 Q-B1

If Black had played 26... *Q-N1*, the ensuing sacrifice would have been much less effective: 27 *BxNP, NxN*; 28 *BPxN, PxB*; 29 *NxNP, B-QR3* and the pawns are blockaded.

# BOTVINNIK



# BRONSTEIN

27 BxNP! NxN 28 BPxN B-KR3

Now 28 . . . PxB; 29 NxP, B-QR3 is impossible because White has 30 N-Q6 (gaining a tempo), Q-N1; 31 P-N5+—.

29 B-QB1 PxB 31 N-Q6 RxR 33 Q-B3  
30 NxNP N-Q2 32 QxR Q-R1

White is better off with 33 Q-N2 immediately.

33 B-KB1 35 KPxB Q-R5  
34 P-N5 BxN 36 Q-N2

Now simply 36 P-B6, QxNP; 37 PxB, QxP; 38 Q-R5 leaves White with the better of it.

36 K-B2 37 K-R2 P-R3

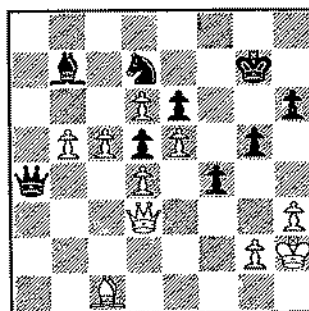
Overlooking White's next move. With 37 . . . N-B3, Black can defend successfully: 38 B-Q2, K-K1; 39 Q-N4, QxQ; 40 BxQ, K-Q2.

38 P-K4! P-B5

On 38 . . . BPxP; 39 BxP or 38 . . . QPxP; 39 P-Q5! White suddenly has a strong attack against the enemy king. The point of Black's reply is that 39 BxP can be answered by 39 . . . P-N4; 40 B-K3, PxP.

39 P-K5 P-N4 40 Q-K2 K-N2 41 Q-Q3

BOTVINNIK



BRONSTEIN

The sealed move, but 41 P-B6 would have been a better try: 41 . . . BxP; 42 PxP, QxP; 43 BxP!, PxP; 44 Q-N4ch, K-B2; 45 QxPch, K-N2; 46 Q-N4ch, K-B2; 47 Q-R4! (47 Q-R5ch, K-N2, Q-K8, NxP!), N-B1; 48 QxP, etc. But it is certainly understandable that Bronstein would be

reluctant to take such incisive action without going home and looking at it first.

41 N-N1! 42 P-R4 Q-B5 43 Q-KR3! QxNP!

Much better than 43 . . . QxB; 44 PxP, PxP; 45 QxP, Q-K6; 46 Q-B6ch, K-R2; 47 QxNP, Q-N6ch; 48 QxQ, PxQch; 49 KxP, when the pawns cannot be stopped.

44 PxP PxP 45 QxP Q-Q6!

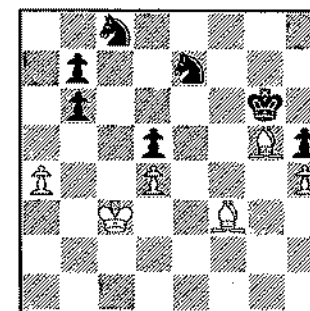
And draws. The game continued

46 Q-B6ch K-R2 51 Q-K8ch K-N2 56 Q-B7ch K-R1  
47 Q-B7ch K-R1 52 Q-K7ch K-R1 57 QxB Q-N6ch  
48 Q-B6ch K-R2 53 Q-K8ch K-N2 58 K-R1  
49 BxP PxP 54 Q-K7ch K-R1  
50 Q-B7ch K-R1 55 Q-B8ch K-R2

and drawn by perpetual check.

Botvinnik took the lead once more in the nineteenth game, and held it with a draw in the twentieth. Then Bronstein won two games in a row, and needed only an even split of the two remaining games to become the new world champion. Botvinnik was in splendid form in the twenty-third game, however, and after his 57th move had the following position in which his two bishops dominate the board:

BOTVINNIK



BRONSTEIN

Here Bronstein, to the surprise of most of the audience, resigned. After 57 . . . N-B3; 58 BxP, N-Q3; 59 B-B3, K-B4; 60 B-B1!,

P-N4; 61 BxN, PxB; 62 P-R5 White wins easily enough, but maybe 59 . . . P-N4 (suggested by Winter and Wade) clouds the issue and anyway one would think that a man for whom a draw would probably have meant the championship of the world might have brought himself to play on for a few more moves.

In the twenty-fourth game Bronstein went all out in the opening, sacrificed two pawns, but failed to secure much of an attack. When, on the 22nd move, Botvinnik proposed a draw, all the winning chances were his; Bronstein accepted, what was perhaps the most interesting match ever played for the world championship ended in a tie, and Botvinnik retained his title.

David Bronstein was only twenty-four years old when he drew his match with Botvinnik, and at the time it seemed certain (if anything of the kind can ever seem certain) that he would be world champion someday—maybe even as soon as 1954, when the next series of tournaments (already under way as the 1951 match was being played) would culminate in another match for the title. All he would need to do, said the commentators, was to work on the endings—the only weakness in his armor that Botvinnik, by the most diligent probing, had been able to discover—and he would sooner or later win the title and dominate world chess for a long time to come.

He was never again to be a serious threat to win the world championship, never again to play a match for the title. In the Candidates' tournament at Zurich, 1953, he tied for second. In Amsterdam, 1956, he tied for third. In the 1958 Interzonal at Portoroz, he lost to an outsider in the final round and failed even to qualify for the next Candidates'. He has, in his long career, enriched modern chess with many wonderful games—he has, in a way, the most fertile imagination of all the grandmasters—but his quest for the world crown has been marked by frustration and disappointment.

In place of Bronstein, a by now familiar figure was, along with Botvinnik of course, to dominate world championship competition for the next decade: Vassily Smyslov. He contested in that time three matches with Botvinnik, tying the first in 1954, winning the

second in 1957, and losing the third in 1958. In that span Smyslov proved himself, in match play anyway, fully Botvinnik's equal: the aggregate score of their three meetings is +18—17=31 in Smyslov's favor.

Vassily Vassilievitch Smyslov was born March 24, 1921, in Moscow and learned chess from his father, himself an enthusiastic player, when he was about six. At fourteen he entered his first tournament, and made steady progress thereafter until at the age of seventeen in 1938 he tied for first in the Moscow championship. In 1940, he finished second in the XII Soviet Championship, half a point behind Bondarevsky and Liliental, who tied for first, and ahead of Keres, Botvinnik, and Boleslavsky. In the so-called Absolute Championship the next year he was third. Gradually he acquired a reputation as a great master of the endgame, and has written, in collaboration with Levenfish, the definitive book on rook and pawn endings.

After his second-place finish in 1948 World Championship tournament he was of course regarded as one of the prime contenders for the title, and his results for the years following amply substantiated this view. His third-place finish at Budapest, 1950, behind joint winners Bronstein and Boleslavsky could hardly have satisfied him, but did entitle him to a place in the next Candidates' tournament scheduled for Zurich in 1953.

Smyslov is a quiet and reserved man, but with a good deal of charm when he wants to exercise it, and a dry sense of humor. Harry Golombek, the English international master who served as a judge for all three Botvinnik-Smyslov matches, recounts an incident from 1954:

After the game was adjourned I remarked to Smyslov that I had been hoping the players would finish the game in one session, or at any rate that to-morrow the game would not last long, as I wanted to go to the opera. "What opera is being played?" he enquired. "Glinka's *Russlan and Ludmilla*," I answered. "Well," he said, "the music's good, but as an opera it's really nothing very much. You know, the Tsar Nicholas I, when he wished to punish his officers, used to send them to see *Russlan and Ludmilla*. It's better for you to stay here and

watch the game being played out!" [Harry Golombek, *The World Chess Championship, 1954*]

Smyslov, incidentally, is a qualified judge: only a flourishing chess career prevented him seeking out fame and fortune as an operatic tenor, and he has occasionally expressed half-serious regret that he didn't decide instead to take up music as a profession and chess as a hobby. There is no World Championship of Singing to lose right back immediately after you win it!

In the XIX Soviet Championship (also the Zonal), several younger players did very well: Keres was first, followed by Tigran Petrosian (b. 1929), and Efim Geller (b. 1925) tied for second, Smyslov fourth, Botvinnik fifth, and Yuri Averbach (b. 1922) and Mark Taimanov (b. 1926) tied for sixth. Those who were not already seeded into the Candidates' qualified for the Interzonal.

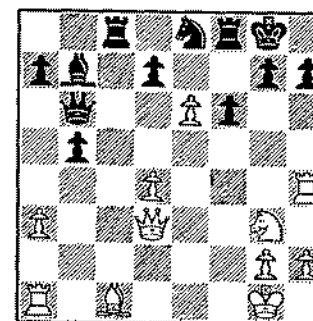
The second Interzonal tournament, held in Stockholm in 1952, ended with five Russians in the top five places. First was Kotov with the best result of his career, three points ahead of Petrosian and Taimanov, who tied for second, while Geller was fourth and Averbach tied for fifth with Gligorich of Yugoslavia, Szabo of Hungary, and Stahlberg of Sweden.

At the outset of the 1953 Candidates' tournament at Zurich it was plain that the only man who posed a threat to the Russians was the American Samuel Reshevsky. This proved to be true, but in the second round veteran Max Euwe made his presence felt with what was probably the best game of the tournament:

### ***Nimzo-Indian Defense***

*White: Geller Black: Euwe* 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, P-B4; 5 P-QR3, BxNch; 6 PxP, P-QN3; 7 B-Q3, B-N2; 8 P-B3, N-B3; 9 N-K2, O-O; 10 O-O, N-QR4; 11 P-K4, N-K1 (*Compare the opening of this game with those of Botvinnik-Reshevsky, p. 125, and Geller-Smyslov, p. 166.*); 12 N-N3, PxP; 13 PxP, R-B1; 14 P-B4, NxP; 15 P-B5, P-B3; 16 R-B4, P-QN4!; 17 R-R4, Q-N3; 18 P-K5, NxKP; 19 PxP, NxB; 20 QxN,

**EUWE**

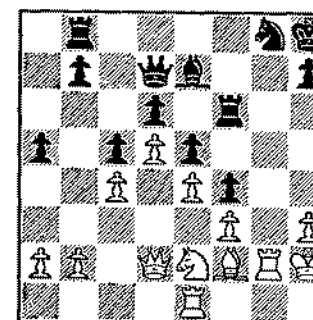


**GELLER**

QxP; 21 QxPch, K-B2; 22 B-R6, R-KR1!; 23 QxR, R-B7; 24 R-QB1 (24 P-Q5!, Q-N3ch; 25 K-R1, Q-B7; 26 R-KN1, BxP; 27 R-K4!, Q-R5! with an unclear position), 24 . . . RxPch; 25 K-B1, Q-N6; 26 K-K1, Q-KB6; Resigns

The tournament was a double round robin, and at the end of the first half the scores were Smyslov 9-4, Reshevsky 8-5, Bronstein and Najdorf 7½-5½, Boleslavsky, Euwe, and Petrosian 7-6, and Taimanov and, of all people, Keres had even scores. Kotov, who had seemed invincible at the Interzonal, was having a bad time, but just at the halfway mark made a grand combination against Averbach. In the following position

**KOTOV**



**AVERBACH**

he played 30 . . . QxPch! and play continued 31 KxQ, R-R3ch; 32 K-N4, N-B3ch; 33 K-B5, N-Q2; 34 R-N5, R-B1ch; 35 K-N4, N-B3ch; 36 K-B5, N-N1ch; 37 K-N4, N-B3ch; 38 K-B5, NxQPch; 39 K-N4, N-B3ch; 40 K-B5, N-N1ch; 41 K-N4, N-B3ch; 42 K-B5, N-N1ch; 43 K-N4, BxR; 44 KxB, R-B2; 45 B-R4, R-N3ch; 46 K-R5, R/2-N2; 47 B-N5, RxBch; 48 K-R4, N-B3; 49 N-N3, RxN; 50 QxQP, R/6-N3; 51 Q-N8ch, R-N1; Resigns

At the start of the second half Keres began a strong comeback, and when in the twenty-first round Smyslov lost to Kotov, the scores of the leaders were: Reshevsky and Smyslov 12½, Bronstein 12 and Keres 11½. In the twenty-second round Reshevsky beat Boleslavsky and Smyslov, Geller, while Bronstein and Keres could only draw; in the twenty-third Smyslov had the bye, but Reshevsky lost to Kotov and so fell behind, while Keres drew level with Bronstein by beating Geller. In the twenty-fourth round Keres faced Smyslov:

#### ENGLISH OPENING

White: Keres Black: Smyslov

1 P-QB4	N-KB3	5 P-QN3	0-0	9 B-Q3	N-B3
2 N-QB3	P-K3	6 B-N2	P-QN3	10 0-0	B-N2
3 N-B3	P-B4	7 P-Q4	PxP	11 R-B1	R-B1
4 P-K3	B-K2	8 PxP	P-Q4	12 R-K1	

Keres has not tried to set Smyslov any arduous problems in the opening and the result is an even position, with White's slight advantage in space offset by the shakiness of his center. Instead of the text move Smyslov recommends 12 Q-K2 followed by 13 KR-Q1, pointing out that it would be too dangerous for Black to take the queen's pawn: 12 Q-K2, PxP; 13 PxP, NxP; 14 NxN, QxN; 15 N-Q5, Q-B4; 16 BxN!, PxB; 17 BxPch, KxB; 18 Q-R5ch, K-N1; 19 R-B3 with a winning attack, or 12 Q-K2, N-QN5; 13 B-N1, PxP; 14 PxP, BxN; 15 PxP, QxP; 16 N-K4, Q-Q2; 17 NxNch, PxN; 18 K-R1 and again White has a winning attack.

12	N-QN5	14 P-QR3	NxN	16 N-K5	NxN
13 B-B1	N-K5	15 RxN	N-B3	17 RxN	

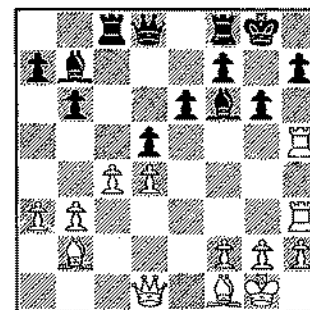
It was safer to simplify by 17 PxN, PxP; 18 BxP, QxQ; 19 RxQ, KR-Q1 with a probable draw. In writing of his play in this game Keres berates himself for pressing too hard, since "a draw too would not have extinguished my hopes."

17 B-KB3 18 R-R5

Threatening 19 RxP!, KxR; 20 Q-R5ch, K-N1; 21 R-R3, B-R5; 22 RxB, P-B4; 23 Q-R7ch with a strong attack.

18 P-N3 19 R/3-R3

#### SMYSLOV



#### KERES

19 PxP!

After 19 . . . PxR; 20 QxP, R-K1; 21 P-R4! White would have had an overwhelming attack: if then 21 . . . PxP; 22 QxRPch, K-B1; 23 B-R3ch, R-K2; 24 R-N3+- After 21 . . . Q-Q3; 22 P-B5 there are three plausible lines: I: 22 . . . PxP; 23 Q-R6, B-N2; 24 QxPch, K-B1; 25 PxP

II: 22 . . . Q-Q1; 23 P-B6, RxP; 24 B-R3, R-Q3; 25 Q-R6, BxP; 26 B-Q3

III: 22 . . . Q-B5; 23 QxPch, K-B1; 24 B-R3, PxP; 25 BxPch, R-K2; 26 R-N3, K-K1; 27 B-N5ch with a winning attack in all lines.

20 RxP

On 20 Q-N4, P-B6!; 21 BxP, RxB; 22 RxR, QxP; 23 QxQ, BxQ; 24 R-B7, PxR; 25 RxB Black has the better ending.

20 P-B6 21 Q-B1 QxP!

Of course not 21 . . . PxB; 22 Q-R6, QxP; 23 R-R8ch, BxR; 24 Q-R7mate. But now the attack is broken and Black wins easily.

22 Q-R6	KR-Q1	25 Q-N4	P-B7	28 BxR	Q-Q5ch
23 B-B1	B-N2	26 B-K2	R-Q5	Resigns	
24 Q-N5	Q-B3	27 P-B4	R-Q8ch		

In the following round Smyslov also defeated Reshevsky and then coasted home; the final scores: Smyslov 18, Bronstein, Keres



and Reshevsky all 16, Petrosian 15, etc. Reshevsky's tie for second place was the closest an American was to get to the world championship for almost twenty years.

When, on March 16, 1954, the champion and his new challenger sat down to face each other on the stage of the Tchaikovsky Salle they had already played each other twenty times previously. The score was 12½-7½ in Botvinnik's favor, but many of those games had taken place when Botvinnik was at the height of his career and Smyslov still a very young man. Now Botvinnik was forty-three years old and Smyslov thirty-three, an age difference that seemed likely to favor the challenger over the long haul.

At the outset, however, it was all Botvinnik; after six games he led 4½-1½. His play was, as usual, highly original and incisive; witness the second game:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

*White:* Botvinnik *Black:* Smyslov 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K3, P-QN3; 5 N-K2, B-R3; 6 P-QR3, B-K2; 7 N-B4, P-Q4; 8 PxP, BxB; 9 KxB, PxP; 10 P-KN4, P-B3; 11 P-N5, KN-Q2; 12 P-KR4, B-Q3; 13 P-K4, PxP; 14 NxP, BxN; 15 BxB, 0-0; 16 P-R5, R-K1; 17 N-Q6, R-K3; 18 P-Q5, RxN; 19 BxR, QxP; 20 Q-B3, QxQP; 21 QxQ, PxQ; 22 R-B1, N-R3; 23 P-N4, P-R3; 24 R-R3, K-R2; 25 R-Q3, N-B3; 26 P-N5, N-B4; 27 BxN, PxB; 28 RxBP, R-QN1; 29 P-R4, R-N2; 30 R/3-QB3, Resigns

Then, in the seventh game, Smyslov began to assert himself and scored his first point after the world champion muffed a draw in the endgame. The eighth game was a draw and then in the ninth Smyslov scored his second victory:

#### FRENCH DEFENSE

*White:* Smyslov *Black:* Botvinnik

1 P-K4	P-K3	3 N-QB3	B-N5
2 P-Q4	P-Q4	4 P-K5	

In the seventh game Smyslov had played 4 P-QR3 and reverted to that move in the nineteenth and twenty-first games. The seventh game went

4 . . . BxNch; 5 PxP, PxP; 6 Q-N4, N-B3; 7 QxNP, R-N1; 8 Q-R6, P-B4; 9 N-K2, R-N3; 10 Q-K3 (*In the twenty-first game he played 10 Q-Q2.*), N-B3; 11 PxP, N-KN5; 12 QxP, Q-Q8ch; 13 KxQ, NxPch; 14 K-K1, NxQ; 15 N-B4 with some advantage to White.

4 P-QB4 5 P-QR3 B-R4

It wasn't until the fourteenth game of the 1957 match that the far more popular 5 . . . BxNch was played; for more on the lines arising from that move, see the notes to the twentieth game of that match, p. 173.

6 P-QN4!

A gambit attributed to Alekhine.

6 PxQP

The alternative, 6 . . . PxNP; 7 N-N5, N-QB3! also yields White strong pressure, but Black has fair defensive resources in that line as well.

7 Q-N4

In the first and third games Smyslov played 7 N-N5, but obtained no advantage; the third game went 7 . . . B-B2; 8 P-KB4, N-K2; 9 N-KB3, B-Q2!; 10 N/5xQP, QN-B3; 11 P-B3, NxN; 12 PxN, N-B4=.

7 N-K2

Botvinnik has long been partial to this pawn sacrifice (compare, for example, the first game of the 1960 match against Tal, p. 191); here 7 . . . K-B1; 8 N-N5, B-N3; 9 B-Q3 is also playable, but offers White a lasting initiative.

8 PxB!

On 8 QxNP, R-N1; 9 QxP, B-B2; 10 N-N5, P-R3; 11 NxP, BxP; 12 KN-B3, Q-B2 Black has excellent play (Estrin-Khasin, Moscow championship, 1953).

8 PxN 9 QxNP R-N1 10 QxP N-Q2

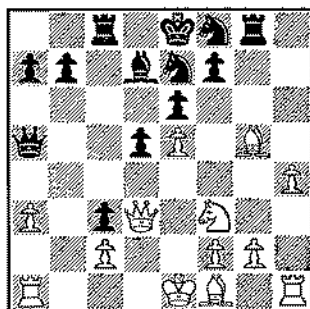
The more aggressive 10 . . . QN-B3 was played in the famous game Fischer-Tal, Leipzig Olympiad, 1960, which continued 11 N-B3, Q-B2; 12 B-QN5!, B-Q2; 13 0-0, 0-0-0; 14 B-N5?, NxKP!; 15 NxN, BxB; 16 NxP, BxR!; 17 NxR, RxB; 18 NxKP, RxPch!; 19 K-R1!, Q-K4; 20 RxB, QxN; 21 KxR, Q-N5ch, Draw!

11 N-B3 N-B1

It was more accurate to play 11 . . . Q-B2 first, forcing 12 B-KB4; in the game this bishop takes up a more active post at N5.

12 Q-Q3 QxP 13 P-KR4 B-Q2 14 B-N5 R-B1

**BOTVINNIK**



**SMYSLOV**

15 N-Q4! N-B4

Or 15... R-B5; 16 Q-K3, R-R5 (16... N-B4; 17 NxN, R-K5; 18 N-Q6mate!); 17 R-QN1, RxP; 18 N-N5+-.

16 R-QN1 R-B5

This move instigates a bold, but unsound, combination involving the sacrifice of the exchange. Black is better off with the quiet 16... P-N3; 17 P-N4, NxN; 18 QxN, QxP; 19 B-Q3±.

17 NxN PxN

Of course not 17... R-K5ch??; 18 QxR, RxB (18... PxQ; 19 N-Q6mate); 19 N-Q6ch and wins.

18 RxP R-K5ch?

Black must play 18... RxB; 19 PxR first, and then 19... R-K5ch, but White can defend himself. Smyslov gives 20 B-K2, N-N3; 21 K-B1 and now I: 21... N-B5; 22 R-R8ch, K-K2; 23 Q-N5 or II: 21... B-B3; 22 R-N8ch, K-K2; 23 Q-R6 "and Black's chances of saving the ending would be very slight indeed."

19 QxR!	QPxQ	22 RxQ	N-K3	25 P-R6	Resigns
20 R-N8ch	B-B1	23 B-B6	RxP		
21 B-N5ch	QxB	24 P-R5	B-R3		

Smyslov also won the tenth and eleventh games, and so, despite his dismal start, was now in the lead by 6-5. Botvinnik won the twelfth game, however, and at the halfway mark the score was tied.

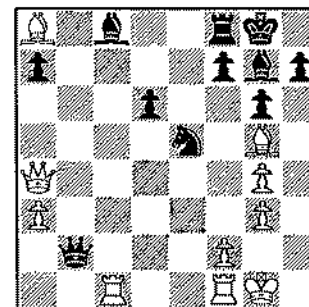
Botvinnik began the second half of the match with renewed energy, and won the thirteenth game in good style. In the four-

teenth, Smyslov gave what was undoubtedly the best performance of the match:

**King's Indian Defense**

White: Botvinnik Black: Smyslov 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 P-KN3, B-N2; 4 B-N2, O-O; 5 N-QB3, P-Q3; 6 N-B3 (Botvinnik was apparently so impressed by this game that in three other games of this match in which he was faced with the King's Indian Defense, he played the innocuous 6 P-K3.), QN-Q2; 7 O-O, P-K4; 8 P-K4, P-B3; 9 B-K3 (For the far more usual 9 P-KR3 see the sixth game of the 1960 Botvinnik-Tal match, p. 191. In his notes to a game against Liliental from the 1941 Absolute Championship where a slightly different position was reached—Liliental had played 8... R-K1 instead of 8... P-B3—Botvinnik remarked that a study of the thought processes of first-category players showed that they played the move 9 P-KR3 automatically, without that deep appraisal of specific positions that he has always maintained characterizes the Soviet School. In this game it is amply proved that 9 P-KR3 is indeed necessary if White hopes to make anything out of the opening.), N-N5; 10 B-N5, Q-N3!; 11 P-KR3, PxP!; 12 N-QR4, Q-R3; 13 PxN, P-N4; 14 NxP (14 P-B5, PxP; 15 NxBP, NxN; 16 B-K7, N-K3±/14 B-K7, R-K1; 15 BxP, PxN; 16 NxP, N-K4±), PxN; 15 NxP, QxN; 16 P-K5, QxP; 17 BxR, NxP±; 18 R-B1, Q-N5; 19 P-R3, QxQNP; 20 QxRP,

**SMYSLOV**



**BOTVINNIK**

B-N2; 21 R-N1? (21 BxB, QxB; 22 R-B3, N-B6ch; 23 RxN, QxR; 24 B-K7, R-B1; 25 BxP with some chances to hold), N-B6ch; 22 K-R1, BxB!; 23 RxQ, NxBch; 24 K-R2, N-B6ch; 25 K-R3, BxR—+; 26 QxP, B-K5; 27 P-R4, K-N2; 28 R-Q1, B-K4; 29 Q-K7, R-B1!; 30 P-R5, R-B7; 31 K-N2, N-Q5ch; 32 K-B1, B-B6; 33 R-N1, N-B3; Resigns (There is no way to prevent a decisive attack against White's KB2 by . . . B-Q5 and/or . . . N-K4xP.)

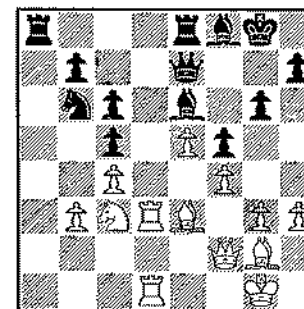
Unperturbed, Botvinnik came back to win the next two games, so that after the sixteenth, he had a 9-7 lead. When the three following games were drawn, it looked as if Botvinnik was finally going to win his first match ever. But Smyslov cut the lead to one point by winning the twentieth game, and after two more draws, pulled even again by winning the twenty-third:

### King's Indian Reversed

White: Smyslov Black: Botvinnik 1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q3, P-QB4; 3 N-Q2, N-QB3; 4 P-KN3, P-KN3; 5 B-N2, B-N2; 6 KN-B3, KN-K2; 7 0-0, 0-0; 8 P-B3, P-Q3; 9 P-QR4, P-B4; 10 Q-N3, P-Q4; 11 PxQP, PxP; 12 R-K1, P-KB5; 13 N-B1, B-N5; 14 PxP, BxN; 15 BxB, K-R1; 16 B-Q2, B-R3; 17 R-K6, BxP; 18 QR-K1, BxB; 19 NxB, N-B4; 20 B-N2, N-R5; 21 QxQP, NxB; 22 QxN/2, QxP; 23 N-K4, R-B4?; 24 N-Q6, R-B6; 25 NxP, QR-KB1; 26 NxP, Q-B4; 27 R-K8, K-N1; 28 RxRch, Resigns (28 . . . KxR; 29 N-K6ch, K-N1; 30 N-N5, R-Q6; 31 QxN, QxNch; 32 Q-N2 etc. or 28 . . . QxR; 29 N-K6, Q-B3; 30 N-N5, R-B4; 31 R-K8ch, K-N2; 32 N-K6ch and 33 QxN)

It was obvious that Botvinnik was tiring rapidly, and if Smyslov could win the twenty-fourth game he would be the new world champion. But Botvinnik had the White pieces, and he quickly achieved a solid position that allowed Smyslov little opportunity for counterplay. When, in the following position Smyslov proposed a draw and Botvinnik accepted, the champion had much the better of it.

SMYSLOV



BOTVINNIK

So once again Botvinnik had failed to win a match, and once again he had retained his title. Cynical remarks to the effect that it was all a Communist conspiracy to prove that the Soviet Union had a goodly supply of players all of whom were entitled to be regarded as world champion were made in some quarters in the West, but were of course unprovable. At any rate the next match for the title was to have a decisive result.

Smyslov promptly earned himself the right to a rematch against Botvinnik by winning the 1956 Candidates' tournament in Amsterdam. Because of a change in the rules only he among the top finishers at Zurich was seeded directly into the Amsterdam tournament; the rest needed to qualify from the Interzonal, held at Göteborg, Sweden, in 1955. There were also several new faces at the Interzonal, among them eighteen-year-old Boris Spassky, who had qualified by tying for third, behind Geller and Smyslov, in the XXII Soviet Championship. At the time of the Göteborg tournament, Spassky had just won the world junior championship at Amsterdam. Samuel Reshevsky was the only one of the seeded players who elected not to participate.

Winner at Göteborg with a 15-5 score was David Bronstein, who seemed well prepared to have another go at the world championship, ahead of Keres (13½), Argentinian former world junior champion Oscar Panno (13), Petrosian (12½), Geller and Szabo (both 12), Argentinian Herman Pilnik, Czechoslovakian Miroslav Filip, and Spassky (all with 11).

The Candidates' this time was a double round-robin affair with ten players, and a new wrinkle was added that the participants from the same country had to face each other at the earliest opportunity; thus in the first few rounds all the Soviet players met each other. In the second round Smyslov handed Geller an important defeat:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

*White: Geller Black: Smyslov* 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-QR3, BxNch; 5 PxP, P-B4; 6 P-K3, P-QN3; 7 N-K2, N-B3; 8 N-N3, 0-0; 9 B-Q3, B-R3; 10 P-K4, N-K1 (*Compare the opening of this game with those of Botvinnik-Reshevsky, p. 125, and Geller-Euwe, p. 156.*); 11 B-K3, N-R4; 12 Q-K2, R-B1; 13 P-Q5 (*R-QB1!*), Q-R5! (*13... N-Q3; 14 P-K5, N/3xP; 15 Q-R5, P-N3; 16 Q-R6+-*); 14 0-0, N-Q3; 15 QR-Q1, P-B4; 16 QPxP, QPxP; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 Q-B3, B-N2; 19 Q-B4, Q-B3; (*19... QxQ; 20 BxQ, N-K5; 21 P-B3, NxN; 22 PxN, B-R3; 23 KR-K1±*); 20 B-N1, N-K5; 21 R-Q7 (*21 NxN, PxN; 22 QxQ, RxQ; 23 R-Q7, R-KB2; 24 KR-Q1, B-B3±*), Q-B3; 22 RxBI?, QxR; 23 NxPI, QR-K1 (*23... NxP/6; 24 Q-R4!*); 24 Q-N4, K-R1; 25 N-N3, NxN; 26 RPxN, Q-KB2; 27 Q-R4, P-KR3; 28 B-Q3, Q-B3; 29 Q-R5, R-Q1; 30 B-K2, Q-B4; 31 Q-R4, Q-B3; 32 Q-R5, N-B3; 33 P-N4, Q-B2; 34 Q-R4, N-K2; 35 Q-R3, N-N3; 36 Q-R2, N-B5; 37 B-B3, QxP; 38 P-N5, R-Q3; 39 R-B1, R-N3; 40 PxP, RxP; 41 Q-N3,



GELLER

Q-K5! (*Sealed.*); 42 QxN (*42 BxQ, N-K7ch; 43 K-B1, NxQ; 44 K-K1, R-R8ch; 45 K-Q2, NxBch++*), QxQ; 43 BxQ, RxB; 44 R-K1, R-QR5; 45 R-K8ch, K-R2; 46 B-K4ch, P-N3; 47 P-N4, RxP; 48 R-K6, RxP; 49 K-N2, P-N4; 50 P-B3, P-N5; 51 P-N5, R-R5; 52 BxPch, K-N2; 53 K-N3, R-Q5; 54 B-K8, P-N6; 55 P-N6, R-Q1 and White lost on time.

Nevertheless at the halfway mark it was Geller who was in front with 6 out of 9, followed by Bronstein and Keres, both with 5½, and Smyslov with 5. In the tenth round Bronstein got a fine game out of the opening against Keres, preserved his advantage through the first session, and adjourned with a big edge. When play resumed, however, he dissipated his advantage, got into time trouble and finally overstepped:

### Ruy Lopez

*White: Bronstein Black: Keres* 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 0-0, B-K2; 6 R-K1, P-QN4; 7 B-N3, P-Q3; 8 P-B3, 0-0; 9 P-KR3, N-QR4; 10 B-B2, P-B4; 11 P-Q4, Q-B2; 12 QN-Q2, BPxP; 13 PxP, N-B3; 14 N-N3, B-N2; 15 B-N5, P-R3; 16 B-R4, N-KR4; 17 P-Q5, N-Q1; 18 BxB, QxB; 19 N/B-Q4, N-B5; 20 N-B5, Q-B3; 21 R-K3, K-R2; 22 P-QR4, PxP; 23 RxP, B-B1; 24 R-N4, N-N2; 25 R-QB3, P-N3; 26 N-K3, P-QR4; 27 R-N6, Q-Q1; 28 N-B4, R-R2; 29 N-B1, Q-N4; 30 R-KN3, Q-K2; 31 N-K2, NxNch; 32 QxN, R-Q1; 33 R-R3, B-Q2; 34 Q-K3, R-QB1; 35 B-Q3, B-K1; 36 P-QN4, P-R5; 37 K-R2, R/2-R1; 38 B-K2, R-B2; 39 P-N5, Q-Q1; 40 R-R2, K-N2; 41 R-B6 (*Sealed.*), R-N1; 42 R-Q2, P-R4; 43 R-Q1, K-N1; 44 K-N1, K-R2; 45 Q-R3, Q-K2; 46 QxRP, N-B4; 47 Q-B2, BxR; 48 QPxP, RxNP; 49 NxQP, R-N3; 50 B-N5, N-K3; 51 B-R4, N-Q5; 52 Q-B5, R/3xP; 53 BxR, RxB; Forfeit

At the same time Geller was losing to Petrosian, and so for the time being, Keres took the lead.

He was not to hold it long, however. His failure to win strategically won games against Spassky and Pilnik enabled both Smyslov

and Geller to make up ground. On the other hand Bronstein's hopes were fading rapidly, and on the eve of a crucial game against Smyslov he appeared to young Boris Spassky, at any rate, "very nervous and excited." Spassky recalls:

It was a revelation to me how seriously and nervously the other candidates took their tournament work. I remember especially Bronstein one evening wanted to reassure himself about his prospects. He took three dice and threw them three times. Each time three fives came up, and Bronstein decided this was a lucky omen. [Quoted from Bruce Cafferty, *Boris Spassky's 100 Best Games*]

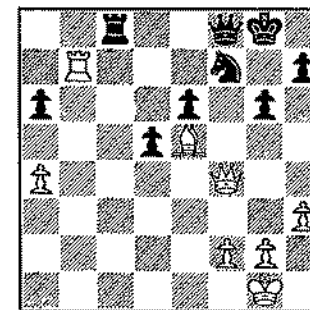
It wasn't:

### English Opening

White: Smyslov Black: Bronstein 1 P-QB4, N-KB3; 2 N-KB3, P-B4; 3 P-KN3, P-Q4; 4 B-N2, N-B3; 5 PxP, NxP; 6 N-B3, N-B3; 7 O-O, P-K3; 8 P-N3, B-K2; 9 B-N2, O-O; 10 R-B1, Q-R4; 11 N-QR4, R-Q1; 12 Q-B2, N-QN5; 13 Q-N1, N/3-Q4; 14 P-QR3, N-R3; 15 P-K4, N-B3; 16 B-B3, Q-N4; 17 KR-Q1, P-B5; 18 BxN, BxB; 19 RxP, Q-QR4; 20 P-K5, B-K2; 21 N-B3, B-Q2; 22 P-QN4, QxRP; 23 P-N5, N-N5; 24 N-N5, BxN; 25 QxN, QxQ; 26 RxQ, B-K1; 27 P-Q4, QR-B1; 28 R-N3, P-QN3; 29 P-Q5, PxP; 30 NxP, K-B1; 31 R-R1, B-Q7; 32 P-K6, B-N4; 33 P-R4, PxP; 34 R-B3ch, K-N1; 35 B-R3, B-Q2; 36 RxP, PxN; 37 RxB, B-B3; 38 B-K6ch, K-B1; 39 R-B7ch, K-K1; 40 R-N7, R-B8ch; 41 K-N2, R-Q3; 42 B-B5, P-N3; 43 B-Q3, B-K2; 44 R-K3, R-Q2; 45 RxP, P-Q5; 46 R-B3, B-Q3; 47 R-R6, K-K2; 48 R-R8, B-B4; 49 R-R8, K-Q3; 50 R-QB8, K-Q4; 51 P-R5!, R-B6; 52 PxP, PxP; 53 R-KN8, R-QN2; 54 RxP, RxB; 55 RxR, K-B5; 56 R-Q1, P-Q6; 57 R-B1ch, Resigns

In the penultimate round Smyslov held a half-point lead over Keres but had to play Spassky with the Black pieces and settled for a quick draw. Keres, meanwhile, had achieved a winning position against Filip:

FILIP



KERES

Here, however, he played 38 K-R2? and lost after 38 . . . R-B5; 39 Q-B6, NxB; 40 QxKPch (40 QxN, Q-B5ch—+), N-B2 etc. Instead 38 Q-B6 wins: 38 . . . NxB; 39 QxN, R-K1; 40 Q-B7. This was the second time Keres had come within an ace of a match for the world title. It was not to be the last.

Botvinnik and Smyslov had met over the board twice since their last match, in the XXII (1955) Soviet Championship, in which Smyslov had tied for first and Botvinnik for third, and Smyslov had won their individual encounter in 28 moves, and in the Alekhine Memorial tournament in Moscow in 1956, where they had tied for first and played a draw. (That tournament, by the way, was the climax of a movement to "rehabilitate" Alekhine—to ignore his political views and to accept him as one of the founders of the Soviet school—and a number of tournaments have been held in his memory since then, the latest in 1971.)

The results of recent games between them, coupled with the ten-year age difference that now, with Botvinnik forty-six, seemed to loom much larger than it did three years before, made Smyslov the favorite when play began; nevertheless, although Smyslov won the first game, Botvinnik came back to take the fourth and fifth, after two draws, to lead 3-2. His powerful showing in the fifth game, especially, gave those who had picked Smyslov to win easily pause for thought:

## King's Indian Defense

**White:** Botvinnik **Black:** Smyslov 1 P-QB4, N-KB3, 2 N-QB3, P-KN3; 3 P-KN3, B-N2; 4 B-N2, O-O; 5 P-Q4, P-Q3; 6 N-B3, B-N5; 7 P-KR3, BxN; 8 BxB, N-B3; 9 B-N2, N-Q2; 10 P-K3, P-K4; 11 P-Q5, N-K2; 12 P-K4, P-KB4; 13 P-KR4, P-B5; 14 B-R3, R-B3; 15 Q-K2, B-R3; 16 B-Q2, N-QB4; 17 P-QN4, P-B6; 18 Q-B1, BxBch; 19 KxB, N-R3; 20 P-R3, P-B3; 21 Q-Q3, N-B2; 22 QR-QN1, R-N1; 23 KR-QB1, P-QR4; 24 P-N5, P-B4; 25 P-N6, N-K1; 26 R-K1, N-N2; 27 R-K3, Q-KB1; 28 R-N5, R-R1; 29 N-R4, Q-B2; 30 Q-B3, P-R4; 31 RxRP, R-N1; 32 N-N2, K-R2; 33 Q-N3, N-N1; 34 N-Q3, N-R3; 35 R-K1, N-N5; 36 Q-R4, Q-K2; 37 K-B2, R/3-B1; 38 R-R7, N-K1; 39 BxN, PxB; 40 Q-N5, N-B3; 41 P-R4, K-N1; 42 Q-R5, Q-Q1; 43 N-N2, N-Q2; 44 N-Q1, N-B3; 45 Q-N5, Q-K2; 46 P-QR5, Q-R2; 47 K-Q3, R-B2; 48 Q-N2, N-R4; 49 R-N1, P-N4; 50 PxP, QR-KB1; 51 Q-Q2, R-B5; 52 N-B3, NxP; 53 RxN, Q-R7; 54 Q-K1, Resigns

The tide began to turn, however, with a fine performance by Smyslov in game six:

### GRUNFELD DEFENSE

**White:** Smyslov **Black:** Botvinnik

1 P-Q4 N-KB3 4 N-B3 B-N2 7 P-K4 B-N5  
2 P-QB4 P-KN3 5 Q-N3 PxP 8 B-K3 KN-Q2  
3 N-QB3 P-Q4 6 QxBP O-O

Ironically, this is Smyslov's move, which he discovered some time after, and perhaps in consequence of, a game he lost to Botvinnik at Groningen, 1946, with 8... N-B3. That game continued 9 P-Q5, BxN; 10 PxB, N-K4; 11 Q-K2, P-B3; 12 P-B4, N/4-Q2; 13 B-N2!, N-N3; 14 R-Q1±.

9 O-O-O

The most aggressive. In the long-awaited meeting between Botvinnik and Fischer at the Varna Olympic in 1962, Botvinnik played 9 B-K2 here and play continued 9... N-QB3; 10 R-Q1, N-N3; 11 Q-B5, Q-Q3!; 12 P-KR3, BxN; 13 PxB, KR-Q1; 14 P-Q5, N-K4; 15 N-N5, Q-KB3; 16 P-B4, N/4-Q2; 17 P-K5, QxBP!; 18 BxQ, NxQ; 19 NxBP, QR-B1; 20 P-Q6, PxP; 21 PxP, BxP. Botvinnik and Fischer disagree about whether White has adequate compensation for the pawn. Botvinnik also remarks that he had analyzed the whole variation when preparing to play Smyslov, but had completely overlooked 17... QxBP. The game was eventually drawn.

The most frequently played move in the position is 9 Q-N3. Euwe-Smyslov, World Championship tournament, 1948, continued 9... N-N3; 10 P-QR4, P-QR4; 11 P-Q5, QBxN; 12 PxB, Q-Q3; 13 N-N5, Q-N5ch; 14 QxQ, PxQ; 15 NxP, RxP and now 16 RxR (instead of 16 R-QN1?) leads to an approximately equal game.

9 N-QB3 10 P-KR3

Reshevsky tried 10 B-K2 here against Larry Evans in Las Vegas, 1965: 10... N-N3; 11 Q-B5, Q-Q3; 12 P-KR3, BxN; 13 PxB, KR-Q1?; 14 P-K5!+—.

10 BxN 12 Q-B5 P-B4 14 P-K5 QxQ?  
11 PxB N-N3 13 N-K2 Q-Q3

After 14... Q-Q4!; 15 P-N3, KR-Q1 (15... QxBP; 16 N-B4+—) 16 N-B4, QxQ; 17 PxQ, RxRch; 18 KxR, N-Q2; 19 N-K6, P-B5; 20 BxP, N/2xKP; 21 B-K3, NxP; 22 B-N2, N/6-Q5 the game is equal (Furman-Krogus, XXVI Soviet Championship, 1958).

15 PxQ N-B5 17 B-N2 NxB  
16 P-B4 KR-Q1 18 PxN N-N5

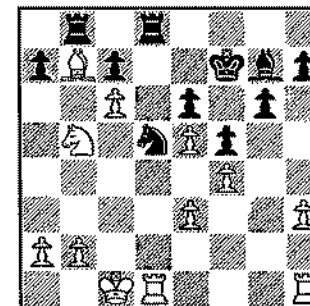
Obviously, to allow 19 BxN, PxB; 20 N-Q4 is suicide.

19 BxP QR-N1 20 P-B6 K-B2

Nor does 20... NxPch help: 21 K-N1, N-N5; 22 N-Q4 followed by 23 N-K6 or 23 N-N5 wins. And 20... N-Q6ch; 21 K-B2, N-B4 (21... N-B7; 22 RxRch, RxR; 23 R-KB1, N-K5; 24 N-Q4); 22 RxRch, RxR; 23 R-Q1 also leaves White with a won ending.

21 N-Q4 P-K3 22 N-N5 N-Q4

### BOTVINNIK



### SMYSLOV

23 RxN! PxR

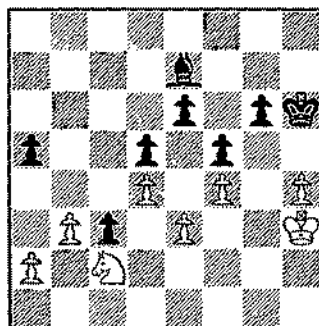
Or 23 . . . RxR; 24 NxBP, R-B4ch; 25 K-N1 the threat of 26 N-R6 cannot be parried.

24 NxBP KR-QB1      26 NxP RxPch      28 N-B3 Resigns  
25 BxR RxB      27 K-Q2 K-K3

After a draw in game seven, Smyslov took the lead by winning the eighth, and then there followed a long stretch of dead-level play in which Botvinnik's most determined efforts to even the score were met by equally determined resistance; at the end of sixteen games, the match stood at 8½-7½ in Smyslov's favor.

In the seventeenth game Smyslov got an advantage out of the opening, failed to make the most of it, and then transposed into an endgame in which he had only a slight edge. In the diagrammed position, however,

SMYSLOV



BOTVINNIK

Botvinnik played 43 K-N3 (After 43 P-R3, K-R4; 44 P-N4 the ending is drawn) and play continued 43 . . . K-R4 44 K-B3? (44 P-R3!), KxP; 45 N-K1, P-N4; 46 PxP, KxP; 47 N-B2, B-Q3; 48 N-K1, K-R5; 49 N-B2, K-R6; 50 N-R1, K-R7; 51 K-B2, B-N6ch; 52 K-B3, B-R5; 53 N-B2, K-N8; 54 K-K2, K-N7; 55 N-R1, B-K2; 56 N-B2, B-B3; 57 N-R1, B-Q1; 58 N-B2, B-B3; 59 P-R3, B-K2; 60 P-N4, P-R5; 61 N-R1, B-N4; 62 N-B2, B-B3; 63 K-Q3, K-B7; 64 N-R1, B-Q1; 65 N-B2, B-N4; 66 P-N5, B-Q1; 67 N-N4, B-N3; 68 N-B2, B-R4; 69 N-N4, K-K8; Resigns (the threat is 70 . . . K-Q8, followed by BxN and P-B7, and 70

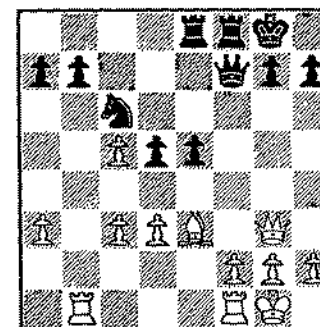
KxP loses to 70 . . . K-K7; 71 P-N6, BxP; 72 N-B2, B-R4ch; 73 K-N2, K-Q7; 74 K-N1, B-B6). A splendidly played endgame.

In the eighteenth game the positions of the seventeenth were reversed: Botvinnik had the winning chances in a long ending in which, however, Smyslov managed to hold his own, and his two-point lead with only five games to go. The nineteenth game was a short draw, and in the twentieth Botvinnik made his last effort to avert the loss of the title:

## French Defense

White: Smyslov Black: Botvinnik 1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K5, P-QB4; 5 P-QR3, BxNch; 6 PxP, Q-B2; 7 Q-N4, P-B3 (In the fourteenth game Botvinnik had played the then usual 7 . . . P-B4 and had a good game after 8 Q-N3, N-K2; 9 B-Q2, 0-0; 10 B-Q3, P-QN3; 11 N-R3, B-R3; 12 N-B4, Q-Q2; 13 P-KR4, BxB; 14 PxP, QN-B3. For 7 . . . P-B4; 8 Q-N3, N-K2; 9 QxP—the gambit accepted—see Tal-Botvinnik, first match game, 1960, p. 191.); 8 N-B3, N-B3 (8 . . . PxQP; 9 B-N5ch, K-B1; 10 0-0±); 9 Q-N3, Q-B2; 10 QPxP, KN-K2; 11 B-Q3, PxP (11 . . . N-N3; 12 PxP, PxP; 13 P-B4, P-Q5; 14 Q-Q6, P-K4; 15 B-K4, B-Q2; 16 B-Q5, Q-K2; 17 B-R6±); 12 NxP, NxN; 13 QxN, 0-0; 14 0-0, N-B3; 15 Q-N3, P-K4; 16 B-K3, B-B4 (B-K3!); 17 QR-N1, BxB; 18 PxP, QR-K1;

BOTVINNIK



SMYSLOV



19 P-KB4!, Q-B2 (*P-K5!*); 20 PxP, RxRch; 21 RxR, QxP; 22 QxQ, NxQ; 23 R-Q1, K-B2; 24 P-R3, N-B3; 25 B-B4, R-K2; 26 B-Q6, R-Q2; 27 R-B1ch, K-K3; 28 R-K1ch, K-B2; 29 K-B2, P-QN3; 30 R-QN1, K-K3; 31 R-N5, P-Q5; 32 P-B4, PxP; 33 B-R2, R-B2ch; 34 K-K2, R-K2; 35 RxP, K-Q2ch; 36 K-Q2, R-K3; 37 R-KN5, P-N3; 38 R-Q5ch, K-B1; 39 B-N1, R-B3 and Black resigned.

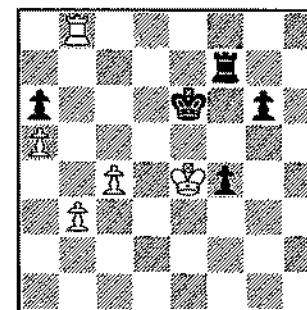
The 1958 title match seemed a lot duller than the two preceding, perhaps because the public had tired of the protagonists, but also because the sporting element seemed almost nonexistent from the very first. Botvinnik set about in grim earnest the business of reclaiming his title, and won the first three games in a row, the first and third as Black in the Caro-Kann and the second in a fine performance with White:

### King's Indian Defense

*White:* Botvinnik *Black:* Smyslov 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, B-N2; 4 P-K4, P-Q3; 5 P-B3, 0-0; 6 B-K3, P-QR3; 7 B-Q3, N-B3; 8 KN-K2, R-N1; 9 P-QR3, N-Q2; 10 B-QN1, N-R4; 11 B-R2, P-QN4; 12 PxP, PxP; 13 P-QN4, N-B5; 14 BxN, PxB; 15 0-0, P-QB3; 16 Q-Q2, N-N3; 17 B-R6, BxB; 18 QxB, P-B3; 19 P-QR4, N-R1; 20 KR-N1, P-KB4; 21 Q-Q2, PxP; 22 PxP, N-B2; 23 P-Q5, PxP; 24 PxP, B-N2; 25 R-KB1, Q-Q2; 26 Q-Q4, P-K3; 27 PxP, NxP; 28 Q-N4, KR-K1; 29 N-Q4, Q-N2; 30 QR-Q1, N-B2; 31 Q-B4, R-K4; 32 N-B6, BxN; 33 QxPch, P-Q4; 34 QxB, R-Q1; 35 Q-N6, Q-K2; 36 Q-Q4, Q-Q3; 37 KR-K1, QR-K1; 38 RxR, RxR; 39 P-N5, N-K3; 40 Q-R7, P-Q5; 41 N-K4, Resigns

The fourth game was a draw, as the fifth ought to have been, but in the following position

BOTVINNIK



SMYSLOV

Botvinnik blundered with 39 . . . K-Q3? (*Correct is 39 . . . R-B4!*) and after 40 R-N6ch, K-B4; 41 K-Q3!, Smyslov had scored his full point. In the sixth game, however, Botvinnik widened the margin to three again with yet another impressive victory.

There followed four consecutive draws, with the champion's chances looking slimmer and slimmer with each of them. Nor did his stirring comeback in the eleventh appear to make much difference:

### Grunfeld Defense

*White:* Smyslov *Black:* Botvinnik 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, P-Q4; 4 N-B3, B-N2; 5 Q-N3, PxP; 6 QxBP, 0-0; 7 P-K4, B-N5; 8 B-K3, KN-Q2; 9 R-Q1 (For notes on this variation see the earlier Grunfeld defense on page 170. *In the fourth game Botvinnik, as White, had played 9 B-K2, N-N3; 10 Q-B5 but got nothing out of it. The text move is more usual and better.*), N-N3; 10 Q-N3, N-B3; 11 P-Q5, N-K4; 12 B-K2, NxNch; 13 PxN, B-R4; 14 P-KR4 (*At the time, an innovation.*), Q-Q2; 15 P-R4, P-R4; 16 N-N5 (*Threatening 17 NxP.*), N-B1; 17 B-Q4, N-Q3; 18 BxB, KxB; 19 N-Q4, K-N1; 20 R-KN1!, Q-R6 (20 . . . P-KB3; 21 N-K6 or 20 . . . K-R1; 21 Q-B3 or 20 . . . P-QB4; 21

*PxPep, PxP; 22 Q-B3 are all in White's favor.); 21 Q-K3! (Threatening 22 Q-N5, K-R1; 23 QxKP.), P-QB4 (P-K4!); 22 PxPep, PxP; 23 Q-N5, P-QB4; 24 N-B6, Resigns*

When Botvinnik came right back to win the next game, however, and lead at the halfway mark by  $7\frac{1}{2}$ - $4\frac{1}{2}$ , it was plain to every one that Smyslov's reign as world champion was over. Although in the remaining games the younger man managed to make up some ground, and was able to chain with a degree of plausibility that if the match had been much longer Botvinnik could not have held on, in the event the half-time lead proved invincible, and the match ended with the final score Botvinnik  $12\frac{1}{2}$ -Smyslov  $10\frac{1}{2}$ .

## 8

### *Tal and Petrosian*

**I**N the years when Botvinnik and Smyslov were occupying, literally as well as figuratively, the center of the stage, there was also a good deal of movement going on in the background. In particular, two new characters, vastly different from the stolid and largely colorless protagonists, had made spectacular entrances—Mikhail Tal and Bobby Fischer.

Mikhail Nekhemovitch Tal, born in Riga, Latvia, on November 9, 1936, was the elder by ten years. He had learned to play chess at the age of eight and was soon an enthusiastic member of the chess club at the Riga Palace of Young Pioneers. At the age of thirteen he had advanced sufficiently to attract the attention of Latvia's leading player, Alexander Koblentz, who became and has remained his trainer and close friend. In 1953 he won the Latvian championship, and in 1954 a fourteen-game match for the master's title against Saigin by the score of 8-6. In 1956 he took first place in the Riga semifinal of the XXIII Soviet Championship and after five rounds of the final shared the lead with the youngest Soviet grandmaster, Boris Spassky, two months his junior. When the two met, however, Tal was routed, and had to content himself at the end with a fifth-place tie.

In the XXIV Soviet Championship in 1957 came the first of Tal's major successes; after barely managing to qualify for the finals, he became, at the age of twenty, the youngest Soviet champion ever—three months younger than Botvinnik when he won his

first title back in 1931. After a further powerful showing at the student team tournament at Reykjavik that summer, he was awarded the title of international grandmaster at the next *FIDE* Congress, by special dispensation since he was not yet an international master.

The XXV Soviet Championship, 1958, held in Riga, was also a Zonal, and to the delight of his home-town fans Tal repeated his success of the previous year, but only by the narrowest margin. For most of the tournament Petrosian was in front, and it was only in the penultimate round that Tal caught up with him. In the final round Petrosian made a quick draw with Averbach, while Tal was barely holding on in a very bad position against Spassky. Spassky also needed a win, to be sure of a place in the Interzonal, and after the first time control looked almost certain to get it. Spassky has described in an interview just what happened:

The game was adjourned, and I had a good position; but I was very tired from analysing and went to resume next morning unshaven. Before I played important games I usually tried to bathe, to put on a very good shirt and suit, and in general to look *comme il faut*. But on this occasion I had analysed incessantly and came to the board looking very dishevelled and fatigued. Then I was like a stubborn mule. I remember that Tal offered me a draw, but I refused. Then I felt my strength ebb away, and I lost the thread of the game. My position deteriorated. I proposed a draw, but Tal refused. When I resigned, there was a thunder of applause, but I was in a daze and hardly understood what was happening. I was certain the world went down; I felt there was something terribly wrong. After this game I went on the street and cried like a child. [Quoted in Cafferty's *Boris Spassky's 100 Best Games*.]

The Russian representatives at the 1958 Interzonal at Portoroz, Yugoslavia, were, in addition to Tal and Petrosian, David Bronstein and Yuri Averbach (Smyslov and Keres were seeded into the Candidates'). It wasn't until 1965 that Spassky was again to be a contender for the world title.

At the start of the Portoroz tournament Tal may have been widely regarded as the strongest entrant, but the one who attracted

the most attention was the fifteen-year-old American champion Bobby Fischer. Robert James Fischer was born March 9, 1946, in Chicago, Illinois. When he was about two years old his parents were divorced, and the care of Bobby and his seven-year-old sister Joan was given to their mother, Regina, who supported the family by teaching school, first in Arizona, then, when Bobby was about five, in Brooklyn, N.Y. With his mother at work, much of the responsibility for Bobby devolved to his sister, who tried to keep him amused with various games acquired from the local candy store: Monopoly, Parcheesi, chess. Of chess he was especially fond (rather fortunate, that—although like passions for Monopoly are not entirely unknown, they are even less socially acceptable), and a couple of years later his mother wrote to Hermann Helms, the then octogenarian chess editor of the now defunct Brooklyn *Daily Eagle*, asking if he could put her into touch with other young chessplayers who might prove companions for her son. Helms replied by informing her of a simultaneous exhibition about to take place at the main branch of the Brooklyn Public Library by former Scottish champion Max Pavey. Fischer played in Pavey's exhibition and lasted about fifteen minutes, but on the same evening was recruited by the Brooklyn Chess Club, where over the next few years he made steady, if unspectacular, progress. He also began to frequent the Marshall and Manhattan Chess Clubs, where he met the veteran master John W. Collins, who had already been mentor to several of America's best younger players, the brothers Robert and Donald Byrne, William Lombardy, and Raymond Weinstein among them. Under Collins's tutelage Bobby's improvement was prodigious; in 1956 he won the U.S. Junior Championship at Philadelphia, and a few weeks later tied for fourth in the U.S. Open. That same year he was invited, on the strength of his junior title, to take part in the annual Rosenwald Trophy tournament for the U.S. Championship, held in New York over Christmas, where he finished eighth out of twelve.

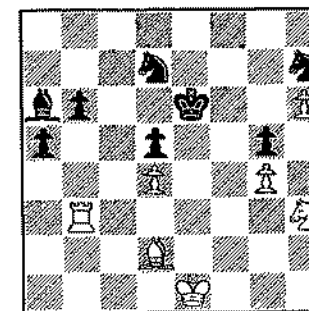
In 1957 he repeated his Junior Championship triumph of the year before, and then went on to win the U.S. Open in Cleveland. It was by this time apparent to everybody that Bobby was a prodigy of the first magnitude, as strong or stronger than Morphy, Capablanca, and Reshevsky at comparable periods of their de-

velopment, but no one was quite ready for what happened next: Fischer won the 1957-58 U.S. Championship in New York ahead of Reshevsky and most of the others of America's strongest players, and since this championship was also a Zonal, qualified, along with Reshevsky, for the upcoming tournament at Portoroz (Reshevsky elected not to play, and his slot was filled by third-place finisher James T. Sherwin).

The other Zonal tournaments also produced some surprises. In an attempt to make all three European Zonals of approximately equal strength, each of them drew its entrants from all three zones; thus from the Zone 1 (formerly Western European) Zonal held in Dublin came Pal Benko, then of Hungary, among others. Benko, who up to that time had almost no international reputation, shortly afterward defected to the West (he had taken part in the unsuccessful Hungarian Revolution of 1956), played in the Interzonal under the flag of *FIDE* as he was then officially stateless, and in the Candidates' under the flag of his newly adopted country, the United States. From the Zone 2 tournament at Wageningen, Holland, came two young Scandinavians, Frederik Olafsson (b. 1935) of Iceland and Bent Larsen (b. 1935) of Denmark. From the newly created Asian and Pacific zone came the champion of the Philippines, Rudolfo Tan Cardoso, who had the previous year lost a match sponsored by the Coca-Cola company to Bobby Fischer by the score of 6-2; he was to finish nineteenth at Portoroz but was to play an important role in deciding the outcome of the tournament.

The winner at Portoroz was Mikhail Tal, who scored 13½-6½ to finish half a point ahead of Svetozar Gligorich (b. 1928); tied for third and fourth places were Benko and Petrosian, and for fifth and sixth Fischer and Olafsson. It was difficult to say whether the most surprising result was Benko's, Fischer's, or David Bronstein's, who failed to qualify for the Candidates' by losing in the last round to Cardoso. In the following diagram Bronstein, who, with a pawn for the exchange and bishops of opposite colors might still have cherished some hopes to save the game, played 41 . . . K-B3, but was quickly disabused when Cardoso replied 42 NxP! (42 . . . NxN; 43 BxNch, KxB; 44 P-R7). Bronstein resigned the game and with it his position as a contender for the world championship.

BRONSTEIN



CARDOSO

Tal's success at the head of the youngest group of candidates ever (Gligorich was the oldest of the Interzonal qualifiers at thirty-five) was received by the critics with mixed notices: on the one hand his tactical powers were immense (Euwe was ready to suggest that in "powers of combination he perhaps outdoes even Alekhine"); earlier Bronstein had written that "Tal has no equals in the ability to calculate swiftly and deeply, in the art of steering a game to suit his own taste by creating complications in the most harmless-looking positions, and in the ability to anticipate and refute the combinational schemes of his opponent." There were, however, serious flaws in his play; what had been said of him some years before, that "he plays very carelessly, and is inexact in realizing an advantage," was to an extent still true; he had thrown away some wins at Portoroz by trying too hard to finish quickly.

What really irritated some of his more sophisticated critics was his philosophy of combination. Whereas most other grandmasters would make a sacrifice only if they could see that it was sound, Tal would sacrifice, and cheerfully, if he did not see that it was unsound: it was then up to the opponent to find a refutation if he could. Usually, he couldn't, but if extensive analysis later revealed one, it naturally appeared that Tal had been lucky, or had won by bullying a weaker player. Thus, on the eve of the Candidates' tournament Smyslov was reported to have remarked that he considered Tal's style unsound and considered it his duty as a grandmaster to beat him properly.

Fischer, meanwhile, was seen to be developing an all-round style, perfecting positional talents to go with his combinative skill and spending much time on the ending. Both he and Tal were, also almost fanatical students of the opening, in the manner of Alekhine (Fischer devoured all the Soviet chess publications he could lay his hands on), but whereas Tal's opening repertoire was very wide, Fischer stubbornly adhered to a few pet variations, occasionally even after they had been demonstrably refuted. This was the obverse of his remarkable self-confidence that was apparent in his play from the very beginning. In their meeting at Portoroz, for example, he had stood right up to Tal:

### Ruy Lopez

*White:* Fischer *Black:* Tal 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 0-0, B-K2; 6 R-K1, P-QN4; 7 B-N3, 0-0; 8 P-KR3, P-Q3; 9 P-B3, N-Q2; 10 P-Q4, N-N3; 11 PxP, NxP; 12 NxN, PxN; 13 Q-R5, Q-Q3; 14 N-Q2, B-K3; 15 N-B3, BxB; 16 PxB, N-Q2; 17 P-QN4, KR-Q1; 18 B-N5, P-KB3; 19 B-K3, Q-K3; 20 KR-Q1, P-QB4; 21 N-R4, B-B1; 22 N-B5, P-N3; 23 Q-N4, K-B2; 24 N-R6ch, BxN; 25 QxQch, KxQ; 26 BxB, PxP; 27 PxP, KR-QB1; 28 B-K3, R-B5; 29 R-Q2, RxNP; 30 R/1-Q1, N-B1; 31 R-Q6ch, K-B2; 32 R-N6, RxNP; 33 R/1-Q6, P-QR4; 34 R-N7ch, K-N1; 35 RxBP, R-K1; 36 R/6-B7, N-K3; 37 RxRP, P-R5; 38 R-R7, R-R1; 39 R/KR7-N7ch, K-R1; 40 R-R7ch, K-N1; 41 R/KR7-N7ch, Drawn

The 1959 Candidates' tournament was held in the three cities of Bled, Zagreb, and Belgrade, Yugoslavia, and began on August 29 with the eight players scheduled to play four games with each of their opponents. Although both lost in the first round, Tal to Smyslov and Keres to Fischer, it was soon apparent that the two of them would battle it out for top honors. At the end of the first tour, Tal, Keres, and Petrosian were tied for the lead with 4½, Gligorich had 3½, Smyslov, Fischer, and Benko 3, and Olafsson was last with 2. Fischer had played some spotty chess, but in the fourth round had produced a sparkling game against Gligorich:

### Sicilian Defense

*White:* Fischer *Black:* Gligorich 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, N-B3; 5 N-QB3, P-Q3; 6 B-QB4, B-Q2; 7 B-N3, P-KN3; 8 P-B3, N-QR4; 9 B-N5, B-N2; 10 Q-Q2, P-KR3; 11 B-K3, R-QB1; 12 0-0-0, N-B5; 13 Q-K2, NxB; 14 QxN, 0-0; 15 P-N4, Q-R4; 16 P-KR4, P-K3; 17 N/4-K2, R-B3; 18 P-N5, PxP; 19 PxP, N-R4; 20 P-B4, KR-B1; 21 K-N1, Q-N3; 22 Q-B3, R-B4; 23 Q-Q3, BxN; 24 NxN, NxP; 25 Q-B3, N-R4; 26 RxN, PxR; 27 QxP, B-K1; 28 Q-R6, RxN; 29 PxR, RxP; 30 P-N6, PxP; 31 R-R1, Q-Q5; 32 Q-R7ch, Resigns

In the first round of the second tour, Tal faced Smyslov again, and took truly wonderful revenge for his earlier defeat:

### CARO-KANN DEFENSE

*White:* Tal *Black:* Smyslov

1 P-K4 P-QB3 2 P-Q3

The system instigated by this move has since enjoyed a modest popularity, but not with Tal, who, in all of his sometimes frenzied efforts to find a promising line against Botvinnik's Caro-Kann, never resorted to it. White's aim is obviously a King's Indian formation with colors reversed.

2 P-Q4 3 N-Q2 P-K4

The most usual order of moves nowadays is 3 . . . P-KN3; 4 P-KN3, B-N2; 5 B-N2, P-K4; 6 KN-B3, N-K2; 7 0-0, 0-0 and now either 8 R-K1, P-Q5; 9 P-QR4, P-QB4; 10 N-B4, QN-B3; 11 P-B3, B-K3; 12 PxP, BxN; 13 PxP, KPXP; 14 P-K5!± (Fischer-Hubner, Palma de Mallorca, 1970) or 8 P-QN4!?, P-QR4; 9 PxP, QxP; 10 B-N2, P-Q5; 11 P-QR4, Q-B2= (Stein-Hort, Los Angeles Interzonal playoffs, 1968).

4 KN-B3 N-Q2 5 P-Q4

But this is of course wildly inconsistent and allows Black to equalize without difficulty.

5 QPxP

After 5 . . . KN-B3; 6 NxP, NxN; 7 PxN, NxP; 8 NxN, PxN; 9 QxQch, KxQ; 10 B-N5ch, B-K2; 11 0-0-0ch White stands better, but the simple 5 . . . KPXP; 6 NxP, KN-B3 is good enough.

6 QNxP PxP 8 B-KN5 B-K2 10 N-Q6  
7 QxP KN-B3 9 0-0-0 0-0

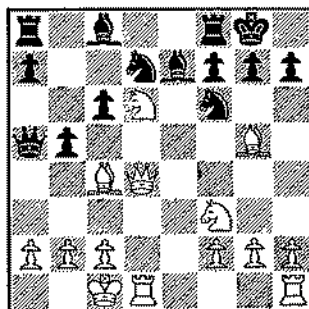
Tal has obviously achieved not only a big advantage out of the opening, but the kind of position in which his special talents are likely to prove useful. He must already have had the ensuing sacrifice in mind when he played the text move.

10 Q-R4 11 B-QB4

Of course not 11 K-N1, BxN; 12 QxB, N-K5++, nor does the bishop move suffice to defend the queen-rook's pawn, since on 11... P-N4 White cannot reply 12 B-N3 because then 12... P-B4 and 13... P-B5 would win a piece.

11 P-N4

SMYSLOV



TAL

12 B-Q2 Q-R3

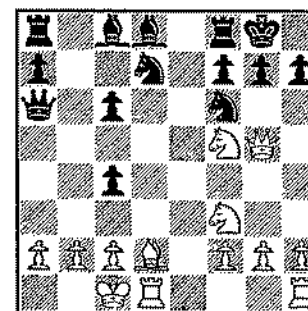
The alternative 12... Q-R5 is less ambitious but safer: 13 NxB, QRxN; 14 B-N3, QxQ; 15 NxQ, N-B4 etc. with a playable position.

13 N-B5 B-Q1

Or 13... B-B4; 14 Q-R4, PxB; 15 B-B3 with a strong attack in prospect.

14 Q-R4 PxB 15 Q-N5

SMYSLOV



TAL

15 N-R4

The answer to 15... P-N3 is not 16 B-B3, QxP; 17 Q-R6, because after 17... PxN; 18 RxN (18 N-N5, B-R4!), BxR; 19 Q-N5ch, K-R1; 20 BxNch, BxB; 21 QxBch, K-N1 there is nothing better than perpetual check, but 16 B-B3, QxP; 17 N-R6ch!, K-N2; 18 N-R4! with two possibilities: I: 18... R-K1; 19 QR-K1!, R-K3; 20 N-N4, Q-R8ch; 21 K-Q2, Q-R3; 22 Q-R6ch, K-N1; 23 RxR, PxR; 24 NxP!, N-K5ch; 25 K-K2, NxBch; 26 PxN, PxN; 27 QxPch, K-B1; 28 N-R6 with a winning attack, and

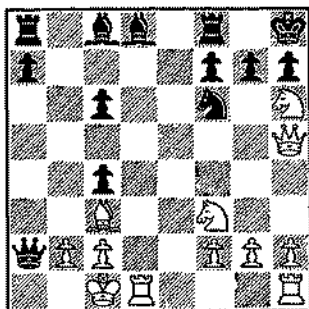
II: 18... Q-R8ch; 19 K-Q2, Q-R3; 20 N/4-B5ch, K-R1; 21 K-K2!, R-K1ch; 22 K-B1 and wins.

16 N-R6ch K-R1 17 QxN QxP

This move loses. With 17... B-B3! Black can hold: 18 B-B3!, BxB; 19 N-N5!, P-N3; 20 N/6xPch, RxN; 21 NxRch, K-N2; 22 Q-B3, B-B3; 23 N-Q6 and only now 23... QxP; 24 N-K8ch, K-B2; 25 RxNch, KxN and White has just enough steam left to force perpetual check (26 QxB, KxR etc.).

18 B-B3 N-B3

SMYSLOV



TAL

19 QxP!

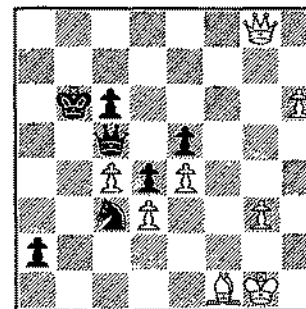
And wins.

19	Q-R8ch	22	RxQ	KxN	25	K-K3	B-N3ch
20	K-Q2	RxQ	23	N-K5ch	K-K3	26	B-Q4
21	NxRch	K-N1	24	NxP/6	N-K5ch		Resigns

In the tenth round, however, Keres beat Tal for the second time, simply by accepting all of his sacrifices with thanks and then turning back the assault without himself turning a hair. By the time the show folded its tents and moved on to Zagreb, Tal had pulled back to within half a point of first, and the standings were: Keres 10, Tal 9½, Petrosian 8½, Gligorich 8, Smyslov 6, Fischer 5½, Benko 5, and Olafsson 3½.

At the beginning of the Zagreb part of the tournament Fischer, who was holding his own against everyone except Tal, had the wildest ending of the event against Petrosian:

PETROSIAN



FISCHER

In this position Petrosian, to move, made a queen, and Fischer replied 36 P-R7; play continued 36 . . . Q-Q3? (36 . . . N-K7ch; 37 K-B2, NxP! compels White to take a draw with 38 Q-N8ch); 37 P-R8/Q, Q-R2; 38 P-N4, K-B4!; 39 Q-KB8 (Q-R2!), Q/2-K2; 40 Q-R8, K-N5!; 41 Q-KR2, K-N6!. Here the game was adjourned, White sealing 42 Q-QR1; when play was resumed, Petrosian continued to improve his position: 42 . . . Q-R6; 43 QxQch, KxQ; 44 Q-R6, Q-KB2!; 45 K-N2, K-N6; 46 Q-Q2, Q-KR2!; 47 K-N3, QxP!; 48 Q-B2?, Q-R8!—here Fischer offered a draw, “afraid he wouldn’t accept. . . . After having fought so hard for the draw, however, Petrosian was obviously unprepared to readjust his frame of mind and start playing for a win. So . . . Drawn.”

The Zagreb tour was the best of the tournament for Tal (it included his only win over Keres) and at the end of it he led with 15½, ahead of Keres (14), Petrosian and Smyslov (11½), Gligorich (10½), Fischer (8½), Benko (6½), and Olafsson (6). When the tournament resumed in Belgrade, Tal picked up another full point on Keres, beating Gligorich while his rival was losing to Smyslov. When the two met in the twenty-third round Keres had to win to retain even a mathematical chance for first:

### Queen’s Gambit Declined

White: Tal Black: Keres 1 N-KB3, P-Q4; 2 P-Q4, P-QB4; 3 P-B4, P-K3; 4 BPxP, KPxP; 5 P-KN3, N-QB3; 6 B-N2, N-B3; 7



0-0, B-K2; 8 N-B3, 0-0; 9 B-N5, B-K3; 10 PxP, BxP; 11 N-QR4, B-N3; 12 NxB, PxN; 13 N-Q4, P-R3; 14 B-B4, Q-Q2; 15 P-QR3, B-R6; 16 Q-Q3, KR-K1; 17 KR-K1, BxB; 18 KxB, R-K5; 19 N-B3, QR-K1; 20 B-Q2, P-Q5; 21 P-K3, Q-Q4; 22 PxP, RxP; 23 RxRch, NxR; 24 Q-K2, N-Q3; 25 B-K3, R-Q6; 26 K-N1, N-B5; 27 N-K1, R-N6; 28 R-B1, NxR; 29 PxN, Q-K4; 30 N-N2, RxNP; 31 Q-Q3, Q-K3; 32 N-B4, R-N6; 33 R-B3, RxR; 34 QxR, Q-K5; 35 Q-N3, P-QN4; 36 QxP, QxPch; 37 K-B1, Q-B6ch; 38 K-N1, Q-K6ch; 39 K-B1, P-N4; 40 N-K2, N-K4; 41 QxP, N-Q6; 42 Q-B8ch, K-N2; 43 Q-KB5, Q-Q7; 44 N-Q4, Q-K8ch; 45 K-N2, Q-K6; 46 Q-Q5, Q-B7ch; 47 K-R3, Q-B8ch; 48 K-N4, N-B7ch; 49 K-B5, Q-Q6ch; 50 K-K5, N-N5ch; 51 K-Q6, QxRPch; 52 K-B7, Q-K2ch; 53 K-B8, N-K6; 54 Q-N5, Q-K5; 55 Q-N2, K-N3; 56 Q-N6ch, P-B3; 57 N-K6, N-B5; 58 Q-R6, N-K4; 59 N-B7, Q-B7; 60 Q-Q6, QxP; 61 N-Q5, Q-KB7; 62 K-N7, QxP; 63 QxPch, K-R4; 64 Q-K6, N-N5; 65 N-K7, Q-B6ch; 66 K-B8, K-R5; 67 N-B5ch, K-R6; 68 K-Q8, P-R4; 69 Q-KN6, N-K4; 70 Q-K6, N-N5; 71 Q-KN6, N-K4; 72 Q-K6, Q-Q6ch; 73 N-Q4ch, N-N5; 74 Q-Q5, N-B7; 75 K-B8, P-R5; 76 Q-K5, Q-K5; 77 Q-B6, Q-B5; 78 N-B5, N-K5; 79 Q-K6, Q-N5; Resigns

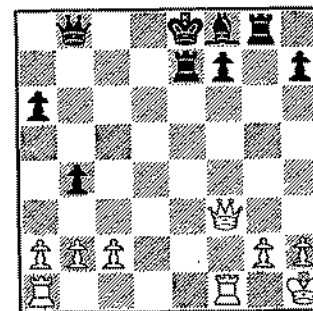
Tal, however, was not to be denied; he had amassed much of his score by striking success against the people toward the bottom of the score table (he ended up 4-0 against Fischer, 3½-½ against Olafsson, and 3½-½ against Benko), and in the twenty-seventh round he beat Fischer again, although not easily:

### Sicilian Defense

*White: Fischer. Black: Tal* 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-Q3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, N-KB3; 5 N-QB3, P-QR3; 6 B-QB4 (*At that time Fischer played this move invariably, and the Russians had come armed against it.*), P-K3; 7 B-N3, P-QN4 (*In the thirteenth round Tal had played 7... B-K2 and the game continued 8 P-B4, 0-0; 9 Q-B3, Q-B2; 10 0-0?, P-QN4; 11 P-B5, P-N5; 12 N-R4, P-K4; 13 N-K2, B-N2=, but 10 P-B5! is better.*); 8 P-B4, P-N5; (8... B-N2!; 9 P-B5, P-K4; 10 N/4-K2, QN-Q2; 11 B-N5, B-

K2; 12 N-N3, R-QB1; 13 0-0, P-KR4!; 14 P-KR4, P-N5= R. *Byrne-Fischer, Soussie, 1967*); 9 N-R4, NxP; 10 0-0, P-N3? (10... B-N2 or 10... N-KB3); 11 P-B5!, NPxP; 12 NxBP!, R-N1 (12... PxN?; 13 Q-Q5, R-R2; 14 Q-Q4+- or 12... P-Q4!; 13 N-R6, BxN; 14 BxB±); 13 B-Q5!, R-R2; 14 BxN? (14 B-K3!, N-B4; 15 Q-R5!, R-N3; 16 QR-K1+-), PxN; 15 BxP, R-K2!; 16 BxB, QxB; 17 B-B4? (P-B3!), Q-B3!; 18 Q-B3, QxN!; 19 BxP, Q-B3!; 20 BxN, Q-N3ch; 21 K-R1, QxB;

TAL



FISCHER

22 Q-B6ch (22 QR-K1, K-Q1!; 23 R-Q1ch, K-B2!; 24 Q-B4ch, K-N2; 25 R-Q6, Q-B2; 26 QxPch, K-B1; 27 RxRP, Q-N2!; 28 QxQch, KxQ; 29 R/6-KB6, R-N2=—analysis by Fischer), R-Q2; 23 QR-K1ch, B-K2; 24 RxP, KxR; 25 Q-K6ch, K-B1!; 26 QxR (26 R-B1ch, K-N2; 27 R-B7ch, K-R1; 28 QxR, R-Q1; 29 Q-N4, Q-K4+-), Q-Q3; 27 Q-N7, R-N3; 28 P-B3, P-QR4; 29 Q-B8ch, K-N2; 30 Q-B4, B-Q1; 31 PxP, PxP; 32 P-KN3? (Q-K4), Q-B3ch; 33 R-K4, QxQ; 34 RxQ, R-N3!; 35 K-N2, K-B3; 36 K-B3, K-K4; 37 K-K3, B-N4ch; 38 K-K2, K-Q4; 39 K-Q3, B-B3; 40 R-B2? (P-N3), B-K4; 41 R-K2, R-KB3; 42 R-QB2, R-B6ch; 43 K-K2, R-B2; 44 K-Q3, B-Q5!; 45 P-QR3, P-N6; 46 R-B8, BxP; 47 R-Q8ch, K-B3; 48 R-QN8, R-B6ch; 49 K-B4, R-B6ch; 50 K-N4, B-R8; 51 P-QR4, P-N7!; Resigns

And so Tal went on to be the next challenger to Botvinnik, and Fischer the youngest grandmaster ever, in consequence of his participation in the Candidates'. Keres, as usual, was second.

Opinion, of course, was sharply divided about Tal's chances against Botvinnik. Some thought that finally he would come up against an opponent immune to unsound sacrifices—who would greet his combinative bravado with solid defense at every turn (that Keres had to a good extent already done so encouraged this point of view). On the other hand, Tal had become in the eyes of chess fans all over the world, especially the young, almost a god, and it was inconceivable to many that his unbroken string of successes could ever be snapped. More objectively, he had the advantage of youth—the twenty-six years' difference between him and his rival was larger than in any match since the ones between Lasker and Steinitz.

Tal's view of Botvinnik on the eve of the match is particularly interesting if compared with Euwe's account of him quoted on page 135:

We were convinced that my future opponent had not recently gone in for any voluntary intensification of a struggle, and in those cases when he was caught up in a combinational "storm," he was less sure of himself. If he received a position in the opening in which he had the initiative, then his opponent who was under pressure could only hope for a miracle, which occurred very, very rarely. The discovery was made that in many games, M. Botvinnik would agree to a minimal edge in the endgame, which as a rule would lead to success thanks to his highly polished technique.

But the most important conclusion at which we arrived in examining all of his games might have been: during a game, M. Botvinnik gives most of his considerations to strategic questions, not being distracted by different tactical variations. This can be both a plus (consistency in the realization of a plan) and a minus, since in several positions his underestimation of the tactics showed considerably in his scores. [Mikhail Tal, *The World Chess Championship, 1960*]

In this view, the old lust for battle, the love of complexity, was gone, and an emphasis on purely technical matters was now predominant. The first game of the match, which began on March 15 at the Pushkin Theater in Moscow, seemed to indicate that Tal's analysis was sound:

## French Defense

*White:* Tal *Black:* Botvinnik 1 P-K4, P-K3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K5, P-QB4; 5 P-QR3, BxNch; 6 PxB, Q-B2; 7 Q-N4, P-B4; 8 Q-N3, N-K2; 9 QxP, R-N1; 10 QxP, PxP; 11 K-Q1, B-Q2; 12 Q-R5ch, N-N3; 13 N-K2, P-Q6; 14 PxP, B-R5ch; 15 K-K1, QxP; 16 B-N5, N-B3; 17 P-Q4, Q-B2; 18 P-R4, P-K4; 19 R-R3, Q-B2; 20 PxP, QNxP; 21 R-K3, K-Q2; 22 R-N1, P-N3; 23 N-B4, QR-K1; 24 R-N4, B-B3; 25 Q-Q1, NxN; 26 R/4xN, N-N3; 27 R-Q4, RxRch; 28 PxR, K-B2; 29 P-B4, PxP; 30 BxP, Q-N2; 31 BxR, QxB; 32 P-R5, Resigns

After a draw in the second game, Botvinnik switched to his now customary Caro-Kann, and after 1 P-K4, P-QB3; 2 N-QB3, P-Q4; 3 N-B3, B-N5; 4 P-KR3, BxN Tal played the surprising 5 PxB?!. The game was eventually drawn and the innovation not repeated, but it showed that the problem of whether White could secure an advantage against the Caro-Kann was to be one of the most important of the match.

The fourth and fifth games were also drawn, with Botvinnik holding the edge in both, but then in the sixth Tal showed that he could "get away with it" against Botvinnik too:

## KING'S INDIAN DEFENSE

*White:* Botvinnik *Black:* Tal

1 P-QB4	N-KB3	3 P-KN3	B-N2	5 P-Q4	P-Q3
2 N-KB3	P-KN3	4 B-N2	0-0	6 N-QB3	QN-Q2

For the more modern 6 . . . N-B3 see the tenth game of the 1966 Petrosian-Spassky match on page 228.

7 0-0 P-K4 8 P-K4 P-B3

The old main line with 8 . . . R-K1 and 9 . . . PxP has gone out of fashion; one example: 8 . . . R-K1; 9 P-KR3, PxP; 10 NxP, N-B4; 11 R-K1, P-QR4; 12 Q-B2, P-B3; 13 B-K3, KN-Q2; 14 QR-Q1, P-R5; 15 N/4-K2, Q-R4; 16 B-KB1, N-K4; 17 N-Q4, P-R6; 18 P-B4, N/4-Q2; 19 P-N3 and White still has a slight edge (Reshevsky-Bronstein, Zurich, 1953).

9 P-KR3

For 9 B-K3 see Botvinnik-Smyslov, twelfth match game, 1954 (p. 163).

9 Q-N3

With 9 . . . PxP Black could still transpose into the line quoted above. Also 9 . . . Q-R4 is often seen nowadays.

# 10 P-Q5

Black was of course threatening 10 . . . PxP; 11 NxP, NxP!. White can maintain the tension in the center by either 10 R-K1 or 10 R-N1:

I: 10 R-K1, R-K1; 11 P-Q5, P-B4; 12 P-QR3, Q-Q1; 13 N-QN5, N-B1; 14 P-QN4± (Lengyel-Gligorich, Amsterdam, 1964).

II: 10 R-N1, PxP; 11 NxP, NxP? (11 . . . Q-N5!); 12 NxN, BxN; 13 P-QN4!, N-K4; 14 P-B5!, PxP; 15 PxP!, Q-Q1; 16 B-R6+— (Reshevsky-Lombardy, U.S. Championship, 1959).

10	PxP	12 N-K1	B-Q2	14 QxN	KR-B1
11 BPxP	N-B4	13 N-Q3	NxN		

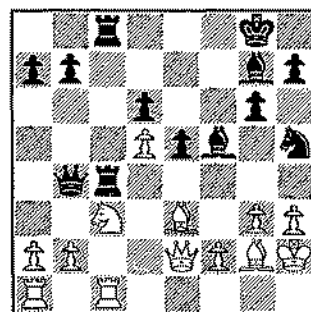
After 14 . . . N-R4; 15 B-K3, Q-Q1; 16 Q-K2!, P-B4; 17 PxP, BxP White stands better, but 14 . . . N-K1; 15 B-K3, Q-Q1; 16 QR-B1, P-B4; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 P-B4 is about even. Tal chooses the most active continuation.

15 R-N1	N-R4	17 Q-K2	R-B5	19 K-R2	P-B4
16 B-K3	Q-N5	18 KR-B1	R/1-QB1		

Since Black needs to recapture with the bishop on his KB4, this move, ceding the K4 square to White's pieces, would be simply bad were it not for the sacrifice on Black's twenty-first move.

20 PxP	BxP	21 R-QR1
--------	-----	----------

# TAL



# BOTVINNIK

21	N-B5!?
----	--------

"In my opinion the arguments which this move raised were completely pointless. It suffices to say that all the other continuations are bad." (Tal)

22 PxN	PxP	23 B-Q2
--------	-----	---------

It was later maintained that with 23 P-QR3 White wins outright, but as Tal has shown, matters are far from clear: 23 P-QR3, Q-N6; 24 BxRP, B-K4! (24 . . . P-N3; 25 Q-Q1!), threatening 25 . . . P-B6ch and now White has a choice:

I: 25 K-N1, P-N3; 26 Q-Q1, QxNP; 27 R-R2, RxN and Black wins.

II: 25 P-B3, P-N3; 26 Q-Q1, QxNP; 27 R-R2, RxN; 28 RxQ, RxR; 29 Q-Q2, BxR; 30 QxB, R/8-B7; 31 Q-Q4, R-K1; 32 QxBP, R/1-K7; 33 Q-N3 with a draw in view.

III: 25 B-B3!, P-N3; 26 Q-Q1, QxNP; 27 R-R2, RxN; 28 RxQ, RxR; 29 Q-Q2, B-K5! or 29 Q-K2, R/1-B6 with unclear play.

23	QxNP
----	------

Tal spent fifteen minutes deciding between this move and 23 . . . B-K4 with the likely continuation 24 P-B3, QxNP; 25 N-Q1!, Q-Q5; 26 RxR, RxR; 27 R-QB1, RxR; 28 BxR, QxQP; 29 B-B1 and the chances are approximately equal. But he overlooked something. . .

24 QR-N1	P-B6	25 RxQ?
----------	------	---------

After 25 BxP, BxR; 26 RxB, Q-B7; 27 B-K4!, RxB Tal had analyzed only 28 QxR, B-K4ch, but 28 NxR!, B-K4ch (28 . . . QxR; 29 NxP, R-B1; 30 Q-K6ch, K-R1; 31 N-B7ch, RxN; 32 QxR, Q-KB4; 33 QxQ, PxQ; 34 K-N3, B-K4ch; 35 B-B4), 29 K-N2, QxR; 30 NxQP!, BxN; 31 Q-K6ch, K-N2; 32 Q-Q7ch gives White a big edge (analysis by Flohr).

25	PxQ	26 R-N3	R-Q5	27 B-K1
----	-----	---------	------	---------

Or 27 B-K3, RxN; 28 R/3xR, R-Q8 and wins.

27	B-K4ch	28 K-N1	B-B5
----	--------	---------	------

Here Tal misses an immediate win by 28 . . . RxN; 29 R/3xR, R-Q8; 30 R-B4, B-N7—a rare occurrence for him. But the move in the text wins safely enough.

29 NxP	RxR	32 N-K2	B-K4	35 R-QB7	BxP
30 NxR/4	RxBch	33 P-B4	B-B3	36 RxQRP	B-B5
31 B-B1	B-K5	34 RxP	BxP	37 R-R8ch	K-B2

Simpler was 37 . . . K-N2; 38 R-K8, P-Q4 or 38 R-R7ch, K-R3.

38 R-R7ch	K-K3	41 K-N2	K-Q3	44 KxB	K-Q4
39 R-R3	P-Q4	42 N-N3	BxN	45 R-R7	P-B6
40 K-B2	B-R5ch	43 BxB	PxB	46 R-QB7	K-Q5

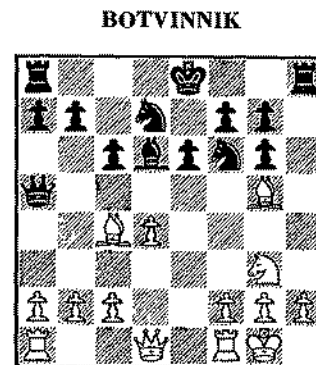
Here the game was adjourned, but Botvinnik resigned without resuming play.

In the seventh game Tal demolished Botvinnik's Caro-Kann, and seemed well on the way to a sweeping victory. In his book of the match, Botvinnik criticizes Tal for not playing to the score in subsequent games—with a three-point lead he might have simply played safe, and compelled his opponent to take chances and possibly overextend himself. "But to play for a draw in seventeen games was a very unpleasant prospect," Tal remarks in reply. At any rate, Botvinnik won the eighth game after a difficult struggle, and then the ninth:

### Caro-Kann Defense

*White:* Tal *Black:* Botvinnik 1 P-K4, P-QB3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, PxP; 4 NxP, B-B4; 5 N-N3, B-N3; 6 KN-K2, N-B3 (Neither 6 . . . P-K3 as played in the fifth game, nor 6 . . . N-Q2 followed by 7 . . . P-K4 as played in the seventh, proved sufficient to equalize.); 7 P-KR4 (7 N-B4, P-K4!; 8 PxP, QxQch; 9 KxQ, N-N5; 10 NxB, RPxN; 11 N-K4, NxP=), P-KR3; 8 N-B4, B-R2; 9 B-B4, P-K3; 10 O-O, B-Q3; 11 NxP!, PxN; 12 BxKP; Q-B2; 13 R-K1 (N-R5!), QN-Q2; 14 B-N8ch, K-B1!; 15 BxB, RxB; 16 N-B5, P-KN3!; 17 BxPch, K-N1; 18 NxB, QxN; 19 B-N5, R-K2; 20 Q-Q3 (20 RxR, QxR; 21 P-R5, Q-B2!—+), K-N2; 21 Q-KN3?? (21 P-KB4!, QR-K1; 22 R-K5!, P-B4; 23 P-QB3, PxP; 24 PxP, NxR; 25 BPxN, RxP; 26 BxNch—+), RxRch; 22 RxR, QxQ; 23 PxQ, R-KB1!; 24 P-B4, N-N5; 25 P-Q5 (25 R-K4, N/2-B3; 26 R-B4, R-K1—+), PxP; 26 PxP, N/2-B3; 27 R-QB1, R-Q1; 28 P-Q6, R-Q2; 29 R-B7, K-B2; 30 BxN, NxB; 31 K-B2, K-K3; 32 RxR, KxR; 33 K-B3, KxP; 34 K-B4, K-K3; 35 P-KN4, N-Q4ch; 36 K-K4, N-B3ch; 37 K-B4, N-Q4ch; 38 K-K4, N-N5; 39 P-R3? (P-R4!), N-B3; 40 P-R5, P-KN4; 41 P-R6, K-B3; 42 K-Q5, K-N3; 43 K-K6, N-R4; 44 P-R4, N-N6; 45 K-Q6, P-R4; 46 K-Q5, KxP; 47 K-B4, N-B8; 48 K-N5, N-Q6; 49 P-QN3, N-B8; 50 KxP, NxPch; 51 K-N4, N-B8; 52 K-B3, K-N3; 53 K-B2, N-K7; 54 K-Q3, N-B8ch; 55 K-B2, N-K7; 56 K-Q3, N-B5ch; 57 K-B4, K-B3; 58 P-N3, N-K7; Resigns

The tenth game was a draw, and then Tal won the eleventh, and led by two points. It was then that he apparently decided to slow the tempo of the match, and five consecutive draws followed. The seventeenth game might also have been a draw if, in the diagrammed position



TAL

Tal had played 12 Q-Q2 instead of the anti-positional 12 P-B4?!. Tal relates that while pondering the alternatives, the precise nature of the issues involved suddenly became clear to him—if he played 12 Q-Q2 and made a draw "I wonder if my wife and I will have time to go to the movies or the theater?" The answer, one supposes, was no, because he played 12 P-B4 instead, and won in 41 moves. Now he again had a three-point lead, and Botvinnik's task seemed impossible.

He tried, though. He narrowly missed winning the ending of the eighteenth game, and then in the nineteenth played the double-edged Dutch Defense in an effort to secure winning chances with the Black pieces:

### Dutch Defense

*White:* Tal *Black:* Botvinnik 1 P-QB4, P-KB4; 2 N-KB3, N-KB3; 3 P-KN3, P-KN3; 4 B-N2, B-N2; 5 P-Q4, P-Q3; 6 N-B3, P-K3; 7

0-0, 0-0; 8 Q-B2, N-B3; 9 R-Q1, Q-K2; 10 R-N1, P-QR4; 11 P-QR3, N-Q1; 12 P-K4, PxP; 13 NxP, NxN; 14 QxN, N-B2; 15 B-R3, Q-B3; 16 B-Q2, P-Q4; 17 Q-K2, PxP; 18 B-B4, N-Q3; 19 N-N5, R-K1; 20 B-N2, R-R3; 21 N-K4, NxN; 22 BxN, P-QN4; 23 P-N3, PxP; 24 QxP, R-B1; 25 QxNP, R-N3; 26 Q-K3, RxR; 27 BxR, B-N2; 28 B-R2, B-Q4; 29 BxB, PxP; 30 BxP, P-R5; 31 R-Q3, Q-B4; 32 B-K5, B-R3; 33 Q-K2, R-B1; 34 R-KB3, Q-R6; 35 B-B7, B-B1; 36 Q-N5, Q-K3; 37 B-K5, Q-QB3; 38 Q-R5, R-R1; 39 Q-Q2, R-B1; 40 K-N2, Q-Q2; 41 P-KR4, Resigns

This was the end—as far as this match was concerned, anyway. The twentieth and twenty-first games were quickly drawn, and Tal was world champion. The sentimentalists lamented the end of an era—Botvinnik had been champion, off and on, for twelve years. The more forward-looking pondered the era-to-be—Tal was only twenty-three, and although his two most likely challengers, Spassky and Fischer, were formidable enough and bound to become more so, it seemed incredible that anyone could ever be stronger than Tal. That Botvinnik was entitled to a return match was of course duly noted—most of his admirers hoped he wouldn't avail himself of what could only be an opportunity to be further humiliated.

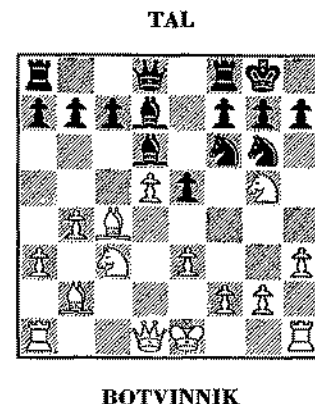
Almost a year to the day after he had quietly surrendered to his dynamic young opponent, Botvinnik had his title back, and he had reclaimed it in a match that appeared even more one-sided than the one in which he had lost it.

The reasons for this strange turn of events are difficult to grasp. Doubtless one of the most important was the state of Tal's health; the serious kidney disease that has frequently hospitalized him and from which he still suffers, first began to trouble him shortly after he won the title. With the single exception of the Curaçao Candidates' tournament of 1962, however, from which he had to withdraw toward the end after doing miserably throughout, it is impossible to say how much his play was affected at any given time—Tal is not one to make excuses, either before or after a bad result. Also it must be noted that Botvinnik played much better in the second match, and it is difficult to exaggerate his enormous store of self-confidence and courage that enabled him to take on again and actually defeat an opponent who had defeated him so decisively the first time around.

Play began at Moscow's Estrada Theater on March 15, 1961. Botvinnik won the first game and Tal the second, and then in the third, Botvinnik sprang a little combination in the opening that secured him to great advantage:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

White: Botvinnik Black: Tal 1 P-QB4, N-KB3; 2 N-QB3, P-K3; 3 P-Q4, B-N5; 4 P-K3, 0-0; 5 B-Q3, P-Q4; 6 P-QR3, PxP; 7 BxP, B-Q3; 8 N-B3, N-QB3; 9 P-QN4 (*In the first game Botvinnik had played 9 N-QN5 here, but after 9 . . . P-K4; 10 NxP, QxN; 11 PxP, QxQch; 12 KxQ, N-KN5; 13 K-K2, N/3xP had no advantage.*), P-K4; 10 B-N2, B-N5; 11 P-Q5, N-K2; 12 P-R3, B-Q2; 13 N-KN5, N-N3;



14 N-K6! (*And White emerges with a winning positional advantage.*), PxN; 15 PxP, K-R1; 16 PxB, QxP; 17 0-0, Q-B4; 18 N-Q5, N-N1; 19 Q-N4, Q-B7; 20 Q-K2, Q-B4; 21 Q-N4, Q-B7; 22 Q-K2, Q-B4; 23 P-K4, Q-Q2; 24 QR-Q1, QR-Q1; 25 Q-N4, Q-K1; 26 P-N3, N-R3; 27 Q-R5, N-N1; 28 Q-K2, N/3-K2; 29 N-K3, N-R3; 30 N-N4!, NxN; 31 PxN, N-B3; 32 K-N2, B-K2; 33 B-Q5, N-Q5; 34 BxN, PxP; 35 B-B4, P-B4; 36 P-N5, B-B3; 37 P-B4, P-Q6; 38 RxP, RxR; 39 BxR, B-Q5; 40 P-K5,

P-KN3; 41 R-KR1, K-N2; 42 Q-K4, P-N3; 43 B-B4, Resigns (After 43 . . . Q-K2—43 . . . Q-Q2; 44 Q-B6!, QxQ; 45 PxQ, R-B1; 46 P-K6!—44 P-N5!—threatening 46 Q-B6 and 47 Q-B6ch—, R-B1; 45 P-B5, PxP; 46 RxPch, KxR; 47 Q-R4ch, Black is mated.)

After three draws, Botvinnik won the sixth game to go two ahead, but Tal recovered quickly with a win in the seventh:

### Caro-Kann Defense

White: Tal Black: Botvinnik 1 P-K4, P-QB3; 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 P-K5, P-QB4; 4 PxP, P-K3; 5 Q-N4, N-QB3; 6 N-KB3, Q-B2; 7 B-QN5, B-Q2; 8 BxN, QxB; 9 B-K3, N-R3; 10 BxN, PxP; 11 N-Q2, QxP; 12 P-B4, 0-0-0; 13 0-0, K-N1; 14 KR-Q1, Q-N3; 15 Q-R4, P-QR4; 16 QR-B1, R-N1; 17 N-N3, P-R5; 18 P-B5, Q-B2; 19 N/N-Q4, R-B1; 20 P-QN4, PxPep; 21 PxP, Q-Q1; 22 QxQ, RxQ; 23 P-QN4, R-N5; 24 P-N5, R-B1; 25 P-B6, B-K1; 26 R-B2, B-N2; 27 R-R1, BxKP; 28 NxR, RxN; 29 N-Q7ch, Resigns

Then Botvinnik reeled off three wins in a row, for a  $7\frac{1}{2}$ -3½ lead, and the whole chess world was agog. Tal's illness—if he was in fact ill during the match—had not then even been hinted at, and people were utterly at a loss to explain how the young man who had swept all before him in the past few years could suddenly find himself driven to the wall by an opponent who had looked so old and tired at the end of their first match just a year before. Doubtless some of Tal's more ardent supporters still expected him to stage a comeback, but Botvinnik held on to his lead with an iron hand, and after twenty games needed only one draw to win the match. The twenty-first game is in a sense the match in microcosm; the old man handled his youthful opponent like a child:

#### KING'S INDIAN DEFENSE

White: Botvinnik Black: Tal

1 P-Q4 N-KB3 3 N-QB3 B-N2 5 P-B3 QN-Q2  
2 P-QB4 P-KN3 4 P-K4 P-Q3

As if intending . . . P-B4, a move with which he had had some success in the past, e.g. the game Bobotzov-Tal from the 1958 student team championship at Uppsala went 6 B-K3, 0-0; 7 Q-Q2, P-B4; 8 KN-K2, Q-R4; 9 0-0-0, P-QR3; 10 K-N1, P-QN4; 11 N-Q5, NxN1?; 12 QxQ, NxR; 13 R-B1? (R-Q3!), NxBP; 14 RxN, PxR; 15 N-B1, R-N1±.

6 B-K3 P-K4

And so not intending . . . P-B4 after all.

7 N-K2 0-0 8 P-Q5 N-R4 9 Q-Q2

Back in one of the main lines; of course to win a pawn by 9 P-KN4, N-B5; 10 NxN, PxN; 11 BxP yields Black strong counterplay after 11 . . . P-KB4!.

9 P-KB4 11 K-N1 QN-B3 13 N-N3 Q-K1  
10 0-0-0 P-QR3 12 PxP PxP

After 13 . . . P-B5; 14 NxN, PxP; 15 NxNch, QxN; 16 Q-B2 (and not 16 QxP, P-K5!; 17 PxP, P-N4 with a strong attack) White has the advantage.

14 B-Q3 NxN

But now 14 . . . P-K5!; 15 NxN, NxN; 16 PxP, P-B5 is satisfactory for Black.

15 PxN P-B4 17 P-KN4 P-N4  
16 B-R6 Q-N3 18 BxB

Here 18 R-R4 would have been more accurate.

18 KxB 20 B-B2 P-R3! 22 QxQ PxQ  
19 R-R4 NPxP 21 R/1-R1 Q-N4 23 R-R6 PxP

Or 23 . . . P-K5; 24 PxKP (24 NPxP, BxP; 25 PxP, B-R2!), NxP; 25 NxN, PxN; RxQP.

24 PxP BxP 26 R-KB1 K-K2  
25 R-N6ch K-B2 27 R-N7ch K-K1

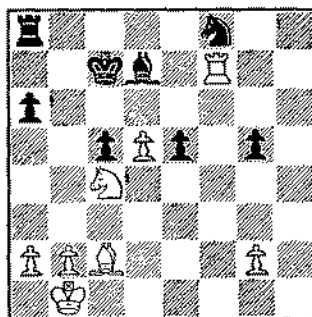
After 27 . . . K-Q1, White continues with 28 N-K4! (and not 28 RxN, RxR; 29 R-N8ch, K-K2; 30 RxR, R-B8ch—+).

28 N-K4 N-Q2 29 NxPch

And here White can go astray with 29 RxRch, KxR; 30 RxP, B-K7!.

29 K-Q1 31 NxP B-Q2  
30 RxRch NxR 32 R-B7 K-B2

TAL



BOTVINNIK

33 P-Q6ch Resigns

Botvinnik's triumph in the return match left the future of the world championship delightfully up in the air: it was obvious that he could not remain champion forever—or could he? Would Tal, who was, after all, only twenty-four years old, make an immediate comeback? Or was it the turn of one of the other young hopefuls, Spassky, or Fischer perhaps, despite his youth? And could all of the old guard be safely discounted—surely not, in the light of old man Botvinnik's recent showing.

The 1962 Interzonal at Stockholm seemed to point the way to a clear answer, astonishing as it might appear. The tournament was simply all Fischer, who swept through undefeated to finish 2½ points ahead of the field.

When the 1959 *FIDE* Congress assembled at Luxembourg to draw up plans for the next World Championship cycle, they could hardly have anticipated the circumstances that would make chaos out of their carefully laid schemes. Difficulties arose almost immediately. In 1960 the East German government erected a wall between East and West Berlin, with international repercussions that were very quickly felt in the chess world. The Central European Zonal, allocated to Berg en Dahl, Holland, lost one player when Wolfgang Uhlmann of East Germany was denied a visa to Holland, and several more when the Bulgarian, Czechoslovakian, Hungarian, Polish, and Yugoslavian representatives withdrew in

protest. The remainder of the field played the tournament anyway, with some uncertainty about whether the final results would stand: Frederick Olafsson won, followed by Andreas Duckstein of Austria and Rudolf Teschner of West Germany, who tied for second place.

This tournament was in fact replayed at Mariánské Lázně, Czechoslovakia, in the summer of 1961, and again Olafsson came out on top, with Miroslav Filip of Czechoslovakia and Uhlmann second and third respectively. Neither Duckstein nor Teschner took part in the second tournament, but the 1961 *FIDE* Congress allowed an additional qualifying place to the winner of a match between them. With the match tied at 3-3 Duckstein inexplicably withdrew, conceding the place to Teschner.

The other Zonal tournaments went more smoothly: the XXVI Soviet Championship was also the Zonal: Petrosian won the tournament followed by Viktor Korchnoi (b. 1931), who had long been a power in Soviet chess but had never before qualified for a place in world championship competition; Geller; and the comparatively unknown Leonid Stein (b. 1934), champion of the Ukraine. Denied qualification were ex-world champion Vassily Smyslov, Boris Spassky, and David Bronstein, among others, and, because of the undeniable truth of the assertion that these players might with some success have offered the qualifiers from the Asian Zonal pawn-and-move, some doubts were raised about the equity of the entire system. A representation to the 1961 *FIDE* Congress that Smyslov be granted a place at the Interzonal was denied. It was also decided that no more than three Russians could qualify from the Interzonal into the Candidates'.

The 1961 U.S. Championship was again the Zonal from this country. Bobby Fischer won, followed by William Lombardy and Raymond Weinstein, but, after some behind-the-scenes maneuvering, Fischer, Arthur Bisguier, and Pal Benko emerged as the U.S. representatives.

The Interzonal was delayed for several months because no country could be found to host it. After plans to hold it in the Soviet Union and Spain both fell through, *FIDE* President Folke Rogard made a desperate appeal to the municipal authorities of Stockholm, and the event was hastily arranged for the Swedish capital in the latter part of January 1962.



The result of the Interzonal could be summarized in two words—Bobby Fischer. Although there was the customary scramble for the last qualifying place, including a playoff won by Benko, all eyes were on the eighteen-year-old American, who took the lead as early as the fifth round, and was never headed. He started slowly, with a couple of draws, but then reeled off five straight wins, and by the seventh round had taken over the lead. In the eighth round he had the bye, and was very briefly passed in the score table by Uhlmann but, starting in round eleven, won another five straight and took over first again, this time for good. Starting in the sixteenth round he met the Russian contingent in four consecutive games, drawing against Stein, Petrosian, and Geller and beating Korchnoi in the following battle:

#### RUY LOPEZ

White: Fischer Black: Korchnoi

1 P-K4	P-K4	4 B-R4	N-B3	7 B-N3	O-O
2 N-KB3	N-QB3	5 O-O	B-K2	8 P-B3	P-Q3
3 B-N5	P-QR3	6 R-K1	P-QN4	9 P-Q4	

One of the strongest weapons in Fischer's armory is a seemingly infinite number of small surprises in the opening, and he has one prepared for Korchnoi in this little-explored line. (See Bronstein-Keres, Budapest, 1950, p. 141.)

9	B-N5	11 PxP	N-QR4	13 B-B1	P-B4
10 B-K3	PxP	12 B-B2	N-B5	14 P-QN3	N-QR4

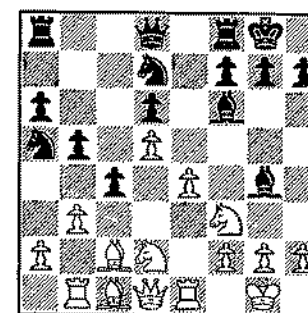
Korchnoi, in notes to the game written shortly afterward, expressed the opinion that the alternative, 14 . . . N-N3, leads to complete equality. According to Fischer, however, White can get an edge in this line, too (doubtless he had yet another little surprise in mind). At any rate, the variation has cropped up twice since in world championship competition, and both times Black played 14 . . . N-QR4.

15 P-Q5!

An improvement on 15 B-N2, N-B3; 16 P-Q5 (Capablanca-Bogolubov, 1922), when Black's knight is back in play; there followed 16 . . . N-N5; 17 QN-Q2, NxN; 18 QxN, R-K1; 19 Q-Q3, P-R3; 20 N-B1, N-Q2; 21 P-KR3 and now 21 . . . BxN instead of 21 . . . B-R4 gives Black a fair game.

15	N-Q2	16 QN-Q2	B-B3	17 R-N1	P-B5
----	------	----------	------	---------	------

#### KORCHNOI



#### FISCHER

Korchnoi called the text move "overoptimistic" because of the many weaknesses it creates (particularly, it yields control of White's Q4 square). When Korchnoi tried this variation with White against Portisch at the Sousse, 1967, Interzonal the latter played 17 . . . B-B6 here, but after 18 P-KR3, BxN; 19 QxB, Q-B3; 20 R-K3, B-Q5; 21 QxQ, NxQ; 22 R-K2 White stood better. Still later Gligorich, in his 1968 Candidates' match against Tal, tried 17 . . . N-K4—the move Korchnoi originally recommended in his notes to his game against Fischer—but after 18 P-KR3, NxNch; 19 NxN, BxN; 20 QxB, R-K1 also failed to equalize. The position simply favors White, it seems.

18 P-KR3

And not 18 P-N4?, P-B6!; 19 PxN, PxN; 20 BxP, N-K4 when White's king-side will be broken up and his extra pawn is useless.

18 BxN

On 18 . . . B-R4; 19 P-KN4 shuts the bishop out of the game, probably forever (that was the way Bogolubov lost to Capablanca).

19 NxB	PxP	20 PxP	Q-B2	21 B-K3
--------	-----	--------	------	---------

Korchnoi criticizes this move and recommends 21 R-K2 instead, intending, presumably, to answer 21 . . . B-B6 with 22 N-Q4, P-N3; 23 B-R6 (23 B-K3 transposes back into the game) with something more for White than he actually gets.

21	B-B6	22 R-K2	P-N5
----	------	---------	------

Now, according to Korchnoi, Black has sufficient play on the dark squares.

23 N-Q4	KR-K1
---------	-------

Black ought to prevent 24 N-B5 by 23 . . . P-N3!. Now White builds up a strong attack on the king-side.

24 N-B5 N-N2      26 N-R6ch K-B1      28 B-Q3  
25 B-Q4 P-N3      27 R-B1 QR-B1

Much stronger was 28 R-K3! with the threat of 29 BxB, PxB; 30 Q-Q4, P-B3; 31 B-N1, winning a pawn. With his next few moves Black sacrifices a pawn anyway, but secures adequate counterplay in exchange.

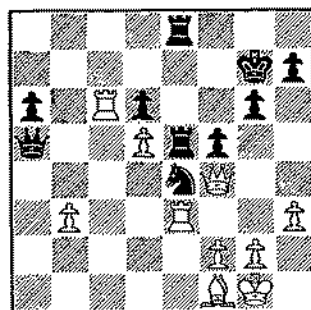
28            Q-R4      31 BxB    PxB            34 QxN    R-QN1  
29 R/2-B2   N-K4      32 RxP    K-N2          35 R-B3    NxKP  
30 B-B1    N-B4      33 N-N4    NxN          36 Q-B4    P-B4

Korchnoi, in time trouble, inaugurates a dangerous plan; 36 . . . R-N2 was obviously safer.

37 R-K3 R-K4      38 R-B6 QR-K1

But now Black ought to play 38 . . . P-N4.

KORCHNOI



FISCHER

39 RxQP! Q-R8?

And now 39 . . . P-N4! was imperative. There would follow 40 R-Q7ch, K-N3; 41 Q-B3, Q-N3, with the dire threat of 42 . . . N-B3, trapping White's rook, e.g. 42 Q-K2! (the best defense, according to Fischer), NxP; 43 RxR, N-N5ch; 44 K-R1, RxR; 45 QxP, QxQ; 46 BxQ, N-B3 regaining the pawn. After the text, Black is lost.

40 RxRP Q-Q5      42 P-Q6 P-N4      44 Q-R7ch Resigns  
41 R-Q3 Q-N7      43 Q-K3 P-B5

A rook is lost: 44 . . . K-B1; 45 P-Q7, R-Q1; 46 Q-N6, K-K2; 47 Qx Reh, KxQ; 48 R-R8ch and 49 P-Q8(Q)ch. Despite its flaws, a fascinating game.

After Geller, then in second place, lost to Pomar in round nineteen, Fischer was two points ahead of the field. Alexander Kotov, in Stockholm as head of the Soviet contingent, relates that after that round, as he and Fischer walked back to the hotel, Bobby asked him how many points he had scored in the Stockholm Interzonal of 1952. "I laughed," Kotov goes on, "You are seeking one more rival. I scored 16½ out of 20." Bobby began to count. 'Then I must have 18½,' he said. 'I shall have.' Although nothing that Kotov writes about Fischer can be taken at its face value, there is nothing improbable in this little anecdote except that, had Fischer won all his remaining games, the most he could have scored was 18.

The final standings at Stockholm showed Fischer well out in front, followed by Geller and Petrosian, tied for second and third, Filip, fourth, Korchnoi, fifth, and Benko, Gligorich, and Stein all tied for the last qualifying place. Geller had played very aggressively, winning more games—ten—than any other competitor except Fischer, and losing only two. Petrosian, on the other hand, had achieved the same result more quietly (he won eight games, but was, besides Bobby, the only one to go through the tournament undefeated), and had played with an efficiency that looked very much designed for the long haul.

Of the qualifiers, the one who caused the biggest surprise was Dr. Miroslav Filip of Czechoslovakia. Because of a serious illness, he had played little chess between 1958 and 1960, but had established a reputation as a difficult man to beat (he lost only twice at Stockholm). Nevertheless, no one thought very much of his chances in the Candidates' tournament.

Benko, Gligorich, and Stein, all with 13½ points, remained in Stockholm for a few extra days and played a double round robin to break the tie. Stein, who was simply playing to become the first alternate to the three Russians, won, drawing both games with Benko and scoring two wins against Gligorich. Benko won one of his games against Gligorich and drew the other, and so became the eighth candidate for the upcoming tournament at Curaçao.

Curaçao is an island in the Netherlands Antilles, not far from

Venezuela. The most salient features of its landscape are, in no particular order, three modern American-style hotels, goats, and cactus. A strange site for a Candidates' tournament, and yet the government of the island, as part of a general effort to encourage the tourist trade, donated 25,000 guilders toward the expenses, and other sources, among them local merchants and a lottery, furnished the rest. With the memory of the unwanted Interzonal fresh in his mind, Folke Rogard must have been delighted to find any site at all.

The tournament duly began at Williamstad, the island's capital, in April—two months after the Interzonal. The first round brought some good chess and some surprises: Bobby Fischer, undefeated not only at Stockholm but also in an arduous tournament at Bled some months before, where he had finished second to Tal, and so had played over forty games without loss, lost to Pal Benko, and Tal, even more unexpectedly, lost to his old friend Petrosian. A quick loss to the man with whom he had made four perfunctory draws at the 1959 Candidates' signaled the beginning of Tal's worst tournament.

The Fischer-Benko struggle is worthy of mention for two reasons: first, Benko played 1 P-KN3, an opening move with which he later defeated Tal, and which has come to be called the Benko System, and secondly, the game led to an altercation between the two Americans, with the result that they didn't speak to each other for the rest of the tournament. Arthur Bisguier, sent by the U.S. Federation to second both Fischer and Benko, must have had a delicate time of it.

Of more strictly chessic interest was the fascinating struggle between Korchnoi and Geller:

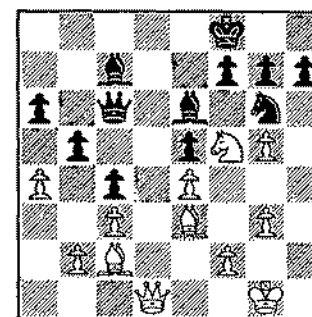
### *King's Indian Defense*

*White:* Korchnoi *Black:* Geller 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 P-KN3, P-B3; 4 P-Q5, B-N2; 5 B-N2, P-Q3; 6 N-QB3, 0-0; 7 N-B3, P-K4; 8 0-0, PxP; 9 PxP, QN-Q2; 10 N-Q2, P-QR4; 11 N-B4, N-B4; 12 N-N5, N-K1; 13 P-B4, B-Q2; 14 P-QR4, NxP; 15 QxN, N-B2; 16 NxN, BxQ; 17 NxR, P-QN4; 18 N/4-N6, PxP;

19 RxP, R-K1; 20 P-K3, R-K2; 21 R-R3, R-B2; 22 NxR, QxN; 23 R-QB4, PxR; 24 NxB, P-R4; 25 N-B3, P-KR5; 26 PxP, Q-Q1; 27 R-R4, QxP; 28 B-Q2, B-R3; 29 R-R1, P-B4; 30 N-K2, Q-K2; 31 K-B2, Q-R5ch; 32 K-B1, QxP; 33 RxP, Q-K4; 34 R-R8ch, K-B2; 35 R-R7ch, K-K1 and drawn by perpetual check.

Fischer and Tal both lost again in the second round, Fischer to Geller and Tal to Keres. Tal also lost in the third round (to Benko, as previously mentioned) while Fischer beat Filip, but that game, even more than the two earlier defeats, showed that all was not well with the young American champion. In the diagrammed posi-

FILIP



FISCHER

tion, Fischer played 38 Q-R1, and went on to win in 66 moves. But 38 Q-R5 wins a pawn immediately (if 38 . . . K-N1, then 39 QxN! wins), a point Fischer would ordinarily have seen in a blitz game. Doubtless the brief interval between the end of the Interzonal and the start of the Candidates' had afforded him too little opportunity to rest up from his exertions at Stockholm.

Meanwhile four of the Russians—Petrosian, Geller, Keres, and Korchnoi—were playing steadily and at the end of five rounds were tied for first with three points each. In the sixth round Korchnoi and Keres went half a point ahead, and in the seventh Korchnoi found himself sole leader with five out of seven. Thus, at the end of the first lap, the standings were: Korchnoi 5, Petrosian, Geller

and Keres 4, Benko 3½, Fischer 3, and, incredibly, Tal and Filip tied for last with 2½.

Fischer's score, while obviously a disappointment to him and his huge following, was still good enough that one of his famous spurts would enable him to overtake and pass the leaders; moreover, in the seventh round he played an excellent game against Keres:

# RUY LOPEZ

White: Fischer Black: Keres

1 P-K4	P-K4	5 0-0	B-K2	9 P-KR3	N-QR4
2 N-KB3	N-QB3	6 R-K1	P-QN4	10 B-B2	P-B4
3 B-N5	P-QR3	7 B-N3	P-Q3	11 P-Q4	N-Q2
4 B-R4	N-B3	8 P-B3	0-0		

Keres introduced this move at Curaçao in place of the usual 11 . . . Q-B2 and scored three points with it out of four games. "I was—and still am—unimpressed," remarks Fischer in his notes to this game—the keynote of Fischer's side in the theoretical battle that was carried on, in tournaments and in various chess magazines and books, over the next few years. The move has since virtually disappeared—for no very clear reason—from tournament praxis.

12 PxBP

The second round game between Tal and Keres continued 12 QN-Q2, BPxP; 13 PxP, N-QB3; 14 P-R3, PxP; 15 N-N3, N/2-K4; 16 N/NxP, B-B3; 17 B-Q2? (17 NxN, NxN; 18 R-N1=), NxN; 18 NxN, N-Q6! ♣. In the twenty-first round, Fischer tried 12 P-Q5 against Keres, but after 12 . . . N-N3; 13 P-KN4?, P-R4!; 14 N-R2, PxP; 15 PxP, B-N4 had a bad game and later lost.

12 PxP 13 QN-Q2 Q-B2

Boleslavsky, annotating in a Russian magazine, recommended 13 . . . P-B3, one point being that 14 N-B4? doesn't work—14 . . . PxN; 15 Q-Q5ch, K-R1; 16 QxR, N-N3; 17 Q-N8, N-B3 trapping the queen. Later 13 . . . P-B3 was tried in Fischer-Ivkov (Havana, 1965) and after 14 N-R4, N-N3; 15 N-B5, R-B2; 16 NxBch, RxN Black was all right, but 16 Q-N4, K-R1; 17 P-KR4 (suggested by Fischer) gives White some pull.

14 N-B1 N-N3 16 Q-K2 B-K3  
15 N-K3 R-Q1 17 N-Q5! NxN

Or 17 . . . BxN; 18 PxB, P-B3; 19 P-KR4!, NxP; 20 P-R5 with advantage to White.

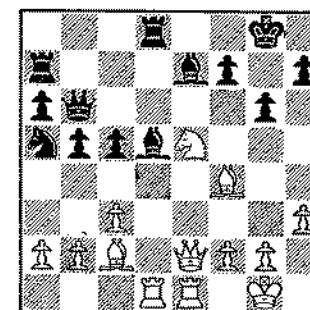
18 PxN BxQP 20 B-B4 Q-N3  
19 NxP R-R2 21 QR-Q1!

Threatening 22 RxB, RxR; 23 Q-K4 and quietly building up his position with an eye to the final assault.

21

P-N3

KERES



FISCHER

On 21 . . . BxRP Fischer gives 22 RxRch, QxR (22 . . . BxR; 23 N-B4!, Q-K3; 24 Q-Q1, R-Q2; 25 N-Q2); 23 P-QN4!, PxP; 24 PxP, BxP; 25 Q-K4!, BxR; 26 QxPch, K-B1; 27 Q-R8ch, K-K2; 28 B-N5ch, P-B3; 29 N-N6ch, K-Q2; 30 B-B5ch, K-B2; 31 B-B4ch winning the queen.

22 N-N4 N-B5

And now after 22 . . . BxRP; 23 RxRch, QxR; 24 B-R6! White has a winning attack.

23 B-R6

And not 23 N-R6ch, K-N2; 24 RxB, RxR; 25 NxP, Q-KB3!.

23 B-K3 24 B-N3 Q-N1 25 RxRch BxR

After 25 . . . QxR?; 26 BxN, BxB; 27 N-B6ch, K-R1; 28 Q-K5 White wins.

26 BxN PxB 27 QxP! Q-Q3

Not 27 . . . QxP because of 28 RxB!

28 Q-R4 Q-K2 30 N-Q5 Q-Q2 32 N-B4 R-K2  
29 N-B6ch K-R1 31 Q-K4! Q-Q3 33 B-N5

As Fischer himself points out, 33 B-B8 wins outright.

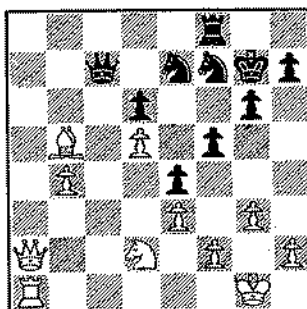
33 R-K1 34 BxB RxB

Or 34 . . . QxB; 35 Q-K5ch, P-B3; 36 QxP, BxQRP; 37 RxRch, QxR; 38 P-B4 etc.

35 NxB	QxN	38 K-R2	R-Q7	41 K-N3	Resigns
36 QxQ	PxQ	39 R-N6	RxBP		
37 RxP	R-Q8ch	40 R-N7	R-B3		

At the start of the eventful twelfth round, however, it was still Korchnoi and Geller tied for first with 7, with Petrosian and Keres close behind at 6½ and Fischer with 5½. In that round, Korchnoi, after securing a big advantage out of the opening and maneuvering very well through the early middlegame, went completely to pieces.

FISCHER



KORCHNOI

In the diagrammed position he played 31 B-B6 (31 N-N3! and 32 N-Q4±), NxB; 32 R-QB1? (32 PxN), Q-R2! and Black won a piece and the game.

At the same time, Petrosian was attacking Benko with unaccustomed ferocity, and seemed well on the way to the brilliancy prize:

### Grunfeld Defense

White: Petrosian Black: Benko 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, P-Q4; 4 N-B3, B-N2; 5 B-B4, 0-0; 6 R-B1, P-B4; 7 QPxP, PxP; 8 P-K4, Q-R4; 9 P-K5, R-Q1; 10 B-Q2, N-N5; 11 BxP, QxBP; 12 N-K4, Q-N3; 13 BxPch!, KxB; 14 RxB!, RxR; 15 N/3-N5ch, K-N1; 16 QxN, Q-B3; 17 N-Q6!, Q-Q2; 18 QxQ?

(But here 18 Q-KR4!, P-KR3; 19 NxR, PxN; 20 Q-B4ch, K-B1; 21 NxKP!, QxN; 22 B-N4 wins; or if, after 18 Q-KR4! Black were to try 18 . . . PxN, then 19 QxPch, K-B1; 20 QxP, K-N1 White would play 21 0-0! followed by P-B4, with a winning attack.), NxQ; 19 NxR, RxN; 20 P-B4, R-B7; 21 K-K2, B-R3; 22 N-B3, RxP; 23 P-N3, P-KN4; Draw

Korchnoi actually won his thirteenth-round game against Benko, but then lost four in a row, and the tournament evolved into a three-man race among Petrosian, Geller, and Keres. The three leaders, in fact, turned on Korchnoi with special ferocity, sensing that his will to resist was all but gone. In round seventeen it was Keres:

### Sicilian Defense

White: Keres Black: Korchnoi 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-K3; 5 N-QB3, Q-B2; 6 B-K3, P-QR3; 7 B-K2, N-B3; 8 P-QR3, B-K2; 9 0-0, 0-0; 10 P-B4, P-Q3; 11 Q-K1, NxN; 12 BxN, P-K4; 13 PxP, PxP; 14 Q-N3, KR-K1; 15 K-R1, B-Q1; 16 B-K3, K-R1; 17 B-Q3, B-K3; 18 QR-K1, QR-B1; 19 B-Q2, Q-N3; 20 N-Q1, N-Q2; 21 P-N4, B-K2; 22 N-K3, Q-Q1; 23 R-Q1, B-R5; 24 Q-B3, N-N1; 25 N-B5, B-B3; 26 B-K3, Q-B2; 27 P-B4, B-K2; 28 P-B5, N-B3; 29 Q-K2, QR-Q1; 30 B-QB4, B-KB1; 31 B-Q5, P-KN3; 32 N-R6, N-Q5; 33 Q-B4, BxN; 34 BxB, P-QN4; 35 Q-R2, Q-K2; 36 B-K3, K-N1; 37 BxN, PxP; 38 RxQP, Q-N4; 39 Q-KB2, Q-K4; 40 R/1-Q1, K-N2 and Black resigned.

And in round twenty-three Petrosian won the brilliancy prize after all:

### English Opening

White: Petrosian Black: Korchnoi 1 P-QB4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, N-KB3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-KN3; 5 N-QB3, P-Q4; 6 B-N5,

PxP; 7 P-K3, Q-R4 (B-N2!); 8 BxN, PxB; 9 BxP, B-QN5 (B-N2!); 10 R-QB1!, P-QR3; 11 0-0, N-Q2 (11 . . . 0-0; 12 N-Q5+—); 12 P-QR3, B-K2? (BxN); 13 P-QN4, Q-K4 (13 . . . QxRP; 14 N-Q5+—); 14 P-B4!, Q-N1 (14 . . . QxPch; 15 K-R1, threatening both 16 R-K1 and 16 N-Q5); 15 BxPch!, KxB; 16 Q-N3ch, K-K1 (16 . . . K-N2; 17 N-K6ch, K-R3; 18 R-B3++); 17 N-Q5, B-Q3; 18 N-K6, P-QN4; 19 N/5-B7ch, K-K2; 20 N-Q4!, K-B1 (20 . . . BxN; 21 N-B6ch or 20 . . . QxN; 21 RxQ, BxR; 22 Q-K6ch, K-B1; 23 Q-B6, R-R2; 24 N-K6ch); 21 NxR, Resigns

At the beginning of the fourth lap Tal withdrew from the tournament because of illness; his request to be allowed to continue play from his hospital bed had been disallowed. Bobby Fischer came to visit him several times, but his compatriots were apparently too involved with the business at hand to do likewise: after the twenty-sixth round Petrosian and Keres were tied for the lead, with Geller half a point behind. In round twenty-seven, Geller had the bye, while Petrosian was in action against Fischer and Keres against Benko, whom he had beaten three times already in this tournament. Petrosian drew, but, to the amazement of all and the disappointment of most, Keres lost to Benko without a chance and thus, when both drew in round twenty-eight, Petrosian with Filip and Keres with Fischer, Keres was nosed out once again. To compound the injury, Benko lost in the last round to Geller, enabling him to tie for second and deprive Keres of qualification to the next Candidates'. A playoff match between them held shortly afterward went to Keres by 4½-3½. The final scores: Petrosian 17½, Keres and Geller 17, Fischer 14, Korchnoi 13½, Benko 11, Tal 8, and Filip 7.

Many times during his preparations for his title defense, Mikhail Botvinnik must have reflected on the vast stylistic and temperamental differences between his forthcoming and his previous opponent. Much the same thoughts must have crossed his mind once more as the adversaries began play at the Estrada Theater in Moscow on March 23, 1963. Botvinnik with Black chose, as he had so many times before, the solid Nimzo-Indian Defense and, instead of Tal's wild Saemisch Variation, Petrosian selected in reply the quiet 4 Q-B2. If, during the game, Botvinnik's mind ever

wandered back to the opening game of his first match against Tal, the differences must have seemed a pure pleasure—Petrosian was playing like a man afflicted with what chess doctors might call terminal stagefright, and indeed just at the first time control the patient died:

### Nimzo-Indian Defense

White: Petrosian Black: Botvinnik 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 Q-B2, P-Q4; 5 PxP, PxP; 6 B-N5, P-KR3; 7 BxN (Botvinnik had had a very pleasant experience against 7 B-R4 when Keres tried that move in the 1941 Absolute championship: 7 . . . P-B4; 8 0-0-0, BxN; 9 QxB, P-KN4; 10 B-N3, PxP; 11 QxP, N-B3; 12 Q-QR4, B-B4 and Black won in 22 moves.) QxB; 8 P-QR3, BxNch; 9 QxB, P-B3; 10 P-K3, 0-0; 11 N-K2 (So far as in Reshevsky-Geller, Zurich, 1953. In that game Geller played 11 . . . B-B4; 12 N-B4, N-Q2; 13 B-K2, KR-K1; 14 0-0, N-B1; 15 P-QN4 and White had much the better of it. Botvinnik's next move prevents 12 N-B4 because of 12 . . . QxN.), R-K1; 12 N-N3, P-KN3; 13 P-B3, P-KR4; 14 B-K2, N-Q2; 15 K-B2, P-R5; 16 N-B1, N-B1; 17 N-Q2, R-K2; 18 KR-K1, B-B4; 19 P-R3, QR-K1; 20 N-B1, N-K3; 21 Q-Q2?, N-N2 (Here Keres suggests 21 . . . N-N4!, threatening 22 . . . BxP. If in reply White plays 22 K-N1, then 22 . . . BxP; 23 PxP, NxRPch wins, e.g. 24 K-R2, RxP; 25 NxR—if 25 KxN, then 25 . . . RxB—Q-B5ch; 26 K-R1; N-B7ch; 27 K-N1, Q-N6ch; 28 K-B1—if 28 N-N2, then 28 . . . P-R6; 29 B-B1, P-R7mate—N-R6; 29 B-Q1, Q-N8ch; 30 K-K2, N-B5mate. If, in this line, White were to try 24 K-R1, then 24 . . . Q-N4; 25 K-R2, Q-N8ch; 26 KxN, RxP! and the threat of . . . P-KN4-5 is decisive. A better defense is offered by 21 Q-Q1, but even then 21 . . . BxP!; 22 PxP, N-K5ch; 23 K-N2, Q-N4ch; 24 K-R2, N-B7 gives Black a winning game: 25 Q-Q2, RxP! or 25 P-B4, Q-B3; 26 Q-Q2, RxP!; 27 NxR, QxPch etc.); 22 QR-Q1, N-R4; 23 R-B1, Q-Q3; 24 R-B3, N-N6; 25 K-N1, N-R4; 26 B-Q1, R-K3; 27 Q-KB2, Q-K2; 28 B-N3, P-KN4; 29 B-Q1, B-N3; 30 P-KN4?, PxPep; 31 NxP, N-B5!; 32 Q-R2, P-QB4; 33 Q-Q2, P-B5; 34 B-R4, P-

N4; 35 B-B2, NxPch; 36 K-B1, Q-B3; 37 K-N2, N-B5ch; 38 PxN, RxR; 39 PxP, Q-K3; 40 P-B4, R-K7ch; Resigns

The next three games were drawn. In the second, Petrosian played the Queen's Gambit Accepted, a defense he was to repeat in the sixth, eighth, sixteenth, twentieth, and twenty-second games, drawing each time. In the third, Botvinnik was a pawn down at adjournment, but much better home analysis enabled him to save half a point. The fourth lasted only twenty-four moves.

In the fifth game the challenger evened the score with his best game of the match.

#### GRUNFELD DEFENSE

**White: Petrosian Black: Botvinnik**

1 P-QB4 P-KN3 3 N-QB3 P-Q4 5 P-K3  
2 P-Q4 N-KB3 4 N-B3 B-N2

As in the first game, Petrosian selects a quiet variation, probably avoiding 5 Q-N3 because Botvinnik had analyzed that move extensively in preparation for his matches against Smyslov.

5 0-0 6 B-K2

Fischer, in one of his columns in *Chess Life*, called 6 B-K2 "a genuine beginner's move," citing this game as an example of how play proceeds thereafter!

6 PxP 8 P-Q5 P-K3  
7 BxP P-B4 9 PxP

Stronger than 9 P-K4, PxP; 10 PxP, R-K1ch; 11 B-K2, QN-Q2; 12 0-0, N-N3 with a satisfactory game for Black.

9 QxQch 11 BxB PxP  
10 KxQ BxP 12 K-K2

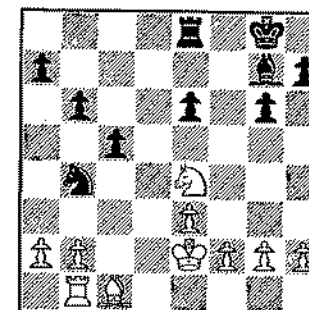
The position is now about equal with Black's queen-side pawn majority adequate compensation for his isolated king's pawn.

12 N-B3 13 R-Q1 QR-Q1

Flohr recommends here 13 . . . K-B2.

14 RxR RxR 16 N/5-K4 NxN 18 R-N1 N-N5  
15 N-KN5 R-K1 17 NxN P-N3

**BOTVINNIK**



**PETROSIAN**

19 B-Q2! N-Q4

Or 19 . . . NxP; 20 R-QR1, N-N5; 21 BxN, PxP; 22 RxP, BxP; 23 R-QN7±.

20 P-QR4 R-QB1 21 P-QN3 B-B1 22 R-QB1 B-K2?

This allows Petrosian advantageous play against Black's queen-side majority. Tal's suggestion, 22 . . . P-QR3, allows Black far more counterplay after 23 P-QN4, P-B5; 24 P-N5, PxP; 25 PxP, B-K2.

23 P-QN4! P-B5 25 B-B3 B-R6  
24 P-N5 K-B2 26 R-B2 NxPch

To prevent 27 N-Q2.

27 RxN B-N5 28 R-B2 K-K2

Tal, commenting in *Sovietski Sport*, offers the following typical analysis of 28 . . . P-K4; 29 N-Q2, P-B6; 30 N-K4, K-K3; 31 P-B3, P-KR3; 32 K-Q3, R-Q1ch; 33 K-B4, R-Q7!; 34 K-N3, RxR (34 . . . K-Q4; 35 NxPch wins for White); 35 KxR, K-Q4; 36 K-Q3!, P-B7; 37 KxP, K-B5; 38 N-Q2ch and White has the advantage.

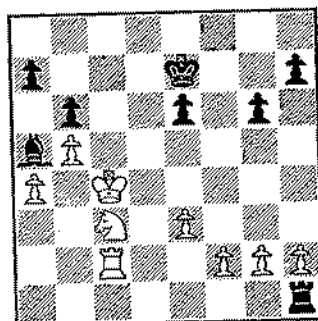
29 N-Q2 P-B6 31 K-Q3 R-Q1ch  
30 N-K4 B-R4 32 K-B4 R-Q8

Or 32 . . . R-Q7; 33 K-N3+—.

33 NxP R-KR8



BOTVINNIK



PETROSIAN

34 N-K4! RxP 35 K-Q4 K-Q2 36 P-N3

After 36 P-N4, P-R4! offers strong counterplay: 37 K-K5, PxP; 38 N-B6ch, K-K2 or 37 PxP, PxP; 38 K-K5, B-K8.

36	B-N5	41 K-B7!	R-R8	46 N-N5	R-Q1ch
37 K-K5	R-R4ch	42 R-K6	B-Q1	47 K-B7	R-Q2ch
38 K-B6	B-K2ch	43 R-Q6ch	K-B1	48 K-N8	Resigns
39 K-N7	P-K4	44 K-K8	B-B2		
40 R-B6	R-R8	45 R-QB6	R-Q8		

The sixth game was a quiet draw, but then in the seventh the challenger took the lead:

### English Opening

White: Petrosian Black: Botvinnik 1 P-QB4, P-KN3; 2 N-KB3, B-N2; 3 N-B3, P-K4; 4 P-KN3, N-K2; 5 B-N2, 0-0; 6 P-Q4, PxP; 7 NxP, QN-B3; 8 NxN, NxN; 9 0-0, P-Q3; 10 B-Q2, B-N5; 11 P-KR3, B-K3; 12 P-N3, Q-Q2; 13 K-R2, QR-K1; 14 R-B1, P-B4; 15 N-Q5, K-R1; 16 B-K3, B-N1; 17 Q-Q2, N-Q1; 18 KR-Q1, N-K3; 19 N-B4, NxN; 20 BxN, Q-B1; 21 P-KR4, R-K2; 22 B-B3, B-B2; 23 Q-R5, B-K1; 24 P-B5, P-Q4; 25 B-Q6, Q-Q2; 26 BxR, QxB; 27 RxP, P-B5; 28 Q-Q2, B-QB3; 29 R-Q3, B-N4; 30 R-Q4,

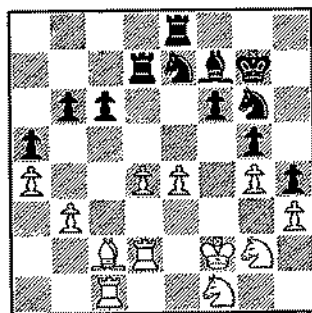
PxPch; 31 PxP, BxR; 32 QxBch, Q-N2; 33 QxQch, KxQ; 34 R-B2, R-K1; 35 K-N2, K-B3; 36 K-B2, B-B3; 37 BxB, PxP; 38 R-B4, K-K4; 39 R-R4, R-QR1; 40 R-R6, K-Q4; 41 P-QN4, K-B5; 42 P-R3, K-N4; 43 R-R5ch, K-B5; 44 K-K3, P-QR3; 45 K-B4, K-Q4; 46 K-N5, R-K1; 47 RxP, RxP; 48 R-R7, R-K4ch; 49 K-B4, R-K2; 50 R-N7, K-K3; 51 P-R4, K-Q2, R-N8, Resigns

There followed a long lull, in which six straight games were drawn. Petrosian, with a lead, was content to sit back and let his opponent make the running, while Botvinnik would not be rushed into premature aggression, but simply bided his time as well. In the fourteenth game, however, Botvinnik saw his opportunity, and tied the score, but only for a moment: Petrosian came back to win the fifteenth. Then, after two more draws, came the decisive eighteenth game:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

White: Botvinnik Black: Petrosian 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-K2; 4 PxP, PxP; 5 B-B4, P-QB3; 6 P-K3, B-KB4; 7 P-KN4, B-K3; 8 P-KR3, N-B3; 9 N-B3, QN-Q2; 10 B-Q3, N-N3; 11 Q-B2, N-B5; 12 K-B1, N-Q3; 13 N-Q2, Q-B1; 14 K-N2, N-Q2; 15 P-B3, P-KN3; 16 QR-QB1, N-N3; 17 P-N3, Q-Q2; 18 N-K2, N/Q-B1; 19 P-QR4, P-QR4; 20 B-N3, B-Q3; 21 N-KB4, N-K2; 22 N-B1, P-R4; 23 B-K2, P-R5; 24 B-R2, P-N4; 25 N-Q3, Q-B2; 26 Q-Q2, N-Q2; 27 B-N1, N-KN3; 28 B-R2, N-K2; 29 B-Q1, P-N3; 30 K-N1, P-B3; 31 P-K4, BxBch; 32 QxB, QxQch; 33 RxQ, R-Q1; 34 K-B2, K-B2; 35 K-K3, KR-K1; 36 R-Q2, K-N2; 37 K-B2, PxP; 38 PxP, N-KB1; 39 N-K1, N/1-N3; 40 N-N2, R-Q2; 41 B-B2, B-B2;

PETROSIAN



BOTVINNIK

42 N/1-K3??, P-QB4; 43 P-Q5, N-K4; 44 R-B1, B-N3; 45 K-K1, N-B1; 46 R/2-B2, R-KB2; 47 K-Q2, N-Q3; 48 N-B5ch, BxN; 49 KPxB, P-B5; 50 R-QN1, P-N4; 51 P-N4, P-B6ch; 52 KxP, R-B2ch; 53 K-Q2, N/4-B5ch; 54 K-Q1, N-R6; 55 R-N2, N/3-B5; 56 R-R2, RPxP; 57 PxP, NxP; 58 R-R6, N-B6ch; 59 K-B1, NxP; 60 B-R4, R/1-QB1; 61 N-K1, N-B5; Resigns

When Petrosian won the nineteenth game as well, Botvinnik was finished. Game twenty was drawn in twenty-one moves, game twenty-one in ten, and when Botvinnik finally stepped down from the throne on which he had sat for most of the last twenty-three years, it was very much of an anticlimax:

### *Queen's Gambit Accepted*

*White:* Botvinnik *Black:* Petrosian 1 P-Q4, P-Q4; 2 P-QB4, PxP; 3 N-KB3, N-KB3; 4 Q-R4ch, N-B3; 5 N-B3, N-Q4; 6 P-K4, N-N3; 7 Q-Q1, B-N5; 8 P-Q5, N-K4; 9 B-KB4, N-N3; 10 B-K3, P-K3; Draw

Thus ended an era.

## 9

# *Boris Spassky and the Advent of Bobby Fischer*

WHILE Tigran Petrosian was back in his native Erevan toasting his success in Armenian plum brandy, Bobby Fischer was making news on the other side of the world. In an article in *Sports Illustrated* entitled "The Russians Have Fixed World Chess," he accused the Soviet contingent at Curaçao of prearranging short draws among themselves in order to assure that an outsider—specifically him—would not get a crack at the world championship. While it was generally agreed that the Russians were not above such tactics if they were necessary, a debate ensued over whether they were; obviously no definitive conclusion was possible. The consequences of Fischer's charges were twofold: first, to show that he meant them, Fischer withdrew from world championship competition until 1967, and secondly, although it was claimed at the time that the action was unrelated to Fischer's charges, *FIDE* drastically altered the means by which the challenger was to be selected. Henceforth, the qualifiers from the Interzonal would play a series of matches among themselves (thus eliminating the opportunities for collusion afforded by a tournament), culminating in the world title match.

The 1964 Interzonal, held at Amsterdam, went off without a hitch. The result of it was a four-way tie for first among Smyslov,

Spassky, and Tal from the USSR and Bent Larsen of Denmark, who, with this victory, emerged as the strongest western player after Fischer and, with Fischer temporarily out of the picture, the biggest threat to Russian supremacy. In fifth place came Leonid Stein, again the victim of the rule limiting the number of qualifiers from any one country to three. Sixth was Bronstein, seventh Ivkov,\* and tied for eighth and ninth, and for the last qualifying place, Portisch\*\* and Reshevsky. In a four-game playoff match, held shortly after the tournament, Portisch squelched what looked like Sammy's last hope for a world title match.

Also included among the candidates were Paul Keres, by virtue of his match win over Geller to decide second place at Curaçao, and, for obvious reasons, Botvinnik, who was, however, disgruntled that he was denied a return match for the title, and declined to participate. The drawing to decide the first-round pairings thus pitted Geller, in place of Botvinnik, against Smyslov, Keres against Spassky, Tal against Portisch, and Larsen against Ivkov.

The quarter-final match that promised the most exciting chess was that between the resurgent Boris Spassky, back in world championship competition for the first time since 1956, and Keres, who knew full well that this was to be his last chance to win the title. And so it proved: the ten-game match, begun April 7, 1965, in Riga, began with a fine victory for Keres, followed by two draws. Spassky tied the score in the fourth game and then went ahead in the fifth, holding that lead through the ninth game by making four draws. The tenth, with Keres needing to win in order to tie the match, was a thriller from start to finish:

### King's Indian Defense

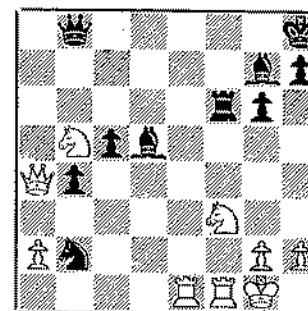
*White: Keres Black: Spassky* 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, B-N2; 4 P-K4, P-Q3; 5 P-B4, P-B4; 6 P-Q5, 0-0; 7 N-B3, P-K3; 8 B-K2, PxP; 9 BPxP, P-QN4; 10 P-K5, PxP; 11 PxP, N-N5; 12 B-KB4 (*An innovation, with the following wild complications in mind. The older 12 B-N5 leads to a good game for Black:*

\* Borislav Ivkov (b. 1933) of Yugoslavia.

\*\* Lajos Portisch (b. 1937) of Hungary.

12 . . . P-B3; 13 PxP, BxP; 14 BxB, QxB; 15 BxP, B-Q2!—*Martinez-Kavalek, Tel Aviv, 1964.*), N-Q2; 13 P-K6 (*The point.*), PxP; 14 PxP, RxB (*Not 14 . . . N-N3 because of 15 QxQ, RxQ; 16 P-K7, R-K1; 17 B-Q6.*); 15 Q-Q5, K-R1; 16 QxR, N-N3; 17 QxP, BxP (*Black has obvious compensation for the exchange.*); 18 0-0, N-K6; 19 R-B2 (*To return the exchange by 19 QR-Q1 was obviously safer, but a draw—the obvious result of a safe policy—would have done Keres no good.*), P-N5; 20 N-QN5, R-B2; 21 Q-R5, Q-QN1; 22 QR-K1, B-Q4; 23 B-B1, NxB; 24 R/2xN, N-B5; 25 Q-R6, R-B3; 26 Q-R4, NxNP;

SPASSKY



KERES

27 Q-B2? (*If 27 Q-R5, not 27 . . . N-B5; 28 Q-B7, QxN; 29 Q-Q8ch, B-N1; 30 R-K8+—, but 27 . . . N-Q6=*), QxN; 28 R-K7 (28 QxN, RxN), N-Q6; 29 Q-K2, P-B5; 30 R-K8ch, R-B1; 31 RxRch, BxR; 32 N-N5, B-B4ch; 33 K-R1, Q-Q2; 34 Q-Q2, Q-K2; 35 N-B3, Q-K6 and White lost on time.

It was generally supported by critics that in the meeting between Smyslov and Geller held concurrently in Moscow, the former world champion had the better chance, but he was markedly off-form and failed to win a game. Geller, on the other hand, played with great energy, winning the odd-numbered games with the White pieces and drawing with Black. In the fifth game he produced what still stands as the best game ever played in the Candidates' matches:

# GRUNFELD DEFENSE

White: Geller Black: Smyslov

1 P-Q4	N-KB3	5 P-K4	NxN	9 O-O	N-B3
2 P-QB4	P-KN3	6 PxN	B-N2	10 B-K3	Q-B2
3 N-QB3	P-Q4	7 B-QB4	P-QB4	11 R-B1	R-Q1
4 PxP	NxP	8 N-K2	O-O		

This line is also a favorite with Fischer, who has, however, had some unfortunate results with it (e.g. two losses to Spassky), although he is quick to point out that the opening was favorable to him both times.

12 P-KB4

At Santa-Monica, 1966, Spassky played 12 Q-K1 against Fischer and there followed 12 . . . P-K3; 13 P-B4, N-R4; 14 B-Q3, P-B4; 15 R-Q1, P-N3; 16 Q-B2, PxQP; 17 BxP, BxB; 18 PxP, B-N2 with about an equal game. At the 1970 Olympiad at Siegen, West Germany, Spassky varied with 12 P-KR3 and there followed 12 . . . P-N3; 13 P-B4, P-K3; 14 Q-K1, N-R4; 15 B-Q3, P-B4; 16 P-N4, PxKP; 17 BxP, B-N2; 18 N-N3, N-B5; 19 BxB, QxB; 20 B-B2, Q-B3; 21 Q-K2, PxP; 22 PxP, P-QN4 and Black has at least an equal game, which Fischer later lost only because, in view of the match score, he pressed too hard to win.

12 P-K3 13 K-R1 P-QN3

It was much safer to play 13 . . . N-R4; 14 B-Q3, P-B4; now White inaugurates a strong attack with a positional pawn sacrifice.

14 P-B5! N-R4

After 14 . . . KPxP; 15 B-N5, R-B1; 16 N-B4 White has powerful pressure.

15 B-Q3	KPxP	17 Q-Q2	KR-K1	19 R-KB2	QR-Q1
16 KPxP	B-N2	18 N-N3	Q-B3		

And not the likely 19 . . . RxB; 20 QxR, PxQP; 21 PxQP, BxP because of 22 Q-B4!, QxRch; 23 QxQ, BxR; 24 Q-R6! and White has a winning advantage because of the threat of 25 P-B6.

20 B-KR6 B-KR1 21 Q-B4 R-Q2 22 N-K4 P-B5

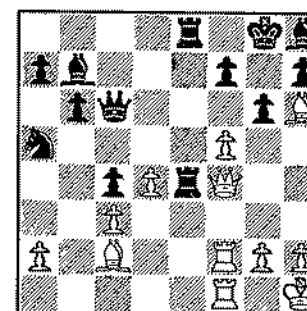
Or 22 . . . RxN; 23 BxR, QxB; 24 Q-N8ch. The best defense now is probably 22 . . . Q-B2; 23 R-K1, BxN; 24 RxB, RxR; 25 QxR with advantage to White.

23 B-B2 R/2-K2 24 QR-KB1!

More forceful than the win of the exchange by 24 PxP, RPxP; 25 B-N5, forcing 25 . . . P-B4.

24 RxN

SMYSLOV



GELLER

25 PxP!

With the obvious point that if 25 . . . RxQ; 26 PxRPMate and the not so obvious one that after 25 . . . QxP there follows 26 QxPch, QxQ; 27 RxQ when Black cannot prevent mate on either KB1 or KR2.

25 P-B3 26 Q-N5!

And now of course Black cannot take the queen because of mate on his KB1.

26 Q-Q2 27 K-N1! B-N2 28 RxP R-N5

Or 28 . . . BxR; 29 QxB, PxP; 30 QxPch, K-R1; 31 B-N5, R/5-K3; 32 B-B6ch, RxB; 33 RxR etc.

29 PxPch K-R1 30 BxBch QxB 31 QxR! Resigns

Meanwhile at Bled, Yugoslavia, Larsen was having an easy time with Ivkov, whom he defeated by 5½-2½, and Tal a not so easy time with Portisch, although the final score was the same. Tal played the whole match in typically ebullient fashion. This is the second game:

## Caro-Kann Defense

**White:** Tal **Black:** Portisch 1 P-K4, P-QB3; 2 N-QB3, P-Q4; 3 N-B3, PxP; 4 NxP, B-N5; 5 P-KR3, BxN; 6 QxB, N-Q2; 7 P-Q4, KN-B3; 8 B-Q3, NxN; 9 QxN, P-K3; 10 0-0, B-K2; 11 P-QB3, N-B3; 12 Q-R4, N-Q4; 13 Q-N4, B-B3; 14 R-K1, Q-N3; 15 P-QB4, N-N5; 16 RxPch, PxR; 17 QxPch, K-B1; 18 B-B4, R-Q1; 19 P-B5, NxBI; 20 PxQ, NxB; 21 Q-N4, N-Q4; 22 PxP, K-K2; 23 P-QN4!, R-R1; 24 R-K1ch, K-Q3; 25 P-N5!, RxP; 26 R-K6ch, K-B2; 27 RxB, Resigns

The pairing for the semifinals were Spassky vs. Geller and Tal vs. Larsen. Both were expected to be close battles, but, as it turned out, only one was—Spassky disposed of Geller rather lightheartedly by 5½-2½; his best effort came in the sixth game:

## Ruy Lopez

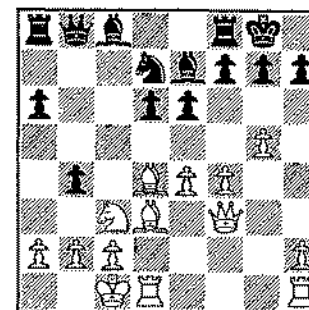
**White:** Spassky **Black:** Geller 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 0-0, B-K2; 6 R-K1, P-QN4; 7 B-N3, 0-0; 8 P-B3, P-Q3; 9 P-KR3, N-Q2; 10 P-Q4, B-B3; 11 QN-Q2, N-N3; 12 N-B1, R-K1; 13 N/1-R2, PxP; 14 PxP, N-R4; 15 B-B2, P-B4; 16 N-N4, BxN; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 P-N5, B-K2; 19 P-K5, B-B1; 20 BxPch, KxB; 21 P-N6ch, K-N1; 22 N-N5, PxP; 23 Q-B3, QxN; 24 BxQ, PxP; 25 QR-B1, R-R2; 26 Q-Q3, R-K3; 27 P-B4!, N/4-B5; 28 PxP, NxKP; 29 QxOP, R-Q2; 30 Q-K4, B-K2; 31 B-K3, N/3-B5; 32 QR-Q1, RxR; 33 RxR, NxP; 34 Q-Q5, K-B2; 35 R-N1, N/7-B5; 36 B-B2, P-N4; 37 R-K1, B-B3; 38 K-R1, N-N7; 39 R-K3, N/7-B5; 40 R-K2, N-Q3; 41 B-Q4, N/3-B5; 42 P-N4, K-K2; 43 B-B5ch, K-B2; 44 Q-N7ch, Resigns

The Tal-Larsen match, on the other hand, was a grim battle, and at the end of nine games the score was tied at 4½-4½. The tenth game, with tension at its height, seemed conclusively to demonstrate that the old Tal with his perhaps theoretically unsound but irresistible play, was again about to sweep all before him (although his play in the earlier games was evidence to the contrary):

## Sicilian Defense

**White:** Tal **Black:** Larsen 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-K3; 5 N-QB3, P-Q3; 6 B-K3, N-B3; 7 P-B4, B-K2; 8 Q-B3, 0-0; 9 0-0-0, Q-B2; 10 N/4-N5, Q-N1; 11 P-KN4, P-QR3; 12 N-Q4, NxN; 13 BxN, P-QN4 (*P-K4!*); 14 P-N5, N-Q2; 15 B-Q3, P-N5;

LARSEN



TAL

16 N-Q5!, PxN; 17 PxP, P-B4; 18 QR-K1, R-B2; 19 P-KR4, B-N2; 20 BxBP (*Tal comments that "this already represents a concession to sporting considerations" and suggests that the sharper 20 P-N6, PxP; 21 P-R5, P-N4 and then 22 BxBP was better—Black's best then is 22 . . . B-B3; 23 B-K6, Q-KB1! and Black has chances to defend himself.*), RxB; 21 RxB, N-K4; 22 Q-K4, Q-KB1; 23 PxN, R-B5; 24 Q-K3, R-B6 (24 . . . BxP; 25 PxP, RxR; 26 QxR!, BxR; 27 P-N3, B-B6!; 28 Q-B4ch, K-R1; 29 R-KB7, QxP; 30 RxB+—); 25 Q-K2, QxR; 26 QxR, PxP; 27 R-K1, R-Q1; 28 RxP, Q-Q3; 29 Q-B4 (*White has a winning advantage.*), R-KB1; 30 Q-K4, P-N6; 31 RPxP, R-B8ch; 32 K-Q2, Q-N5ch; 33 P-B3, Q-Q3; 34 B-B5!, QxB; 35 R-K8ch, R-B1; 36 Q-K6ch, K-R1; 37 Q-B7!, Resigns

Opinions about the Spassky vs. Tal match were about evenly divided—some gave a slight edge to Spassky because of his plus score against Tal in previous games, others thought Tal would win

because, well, he was Tal. In the event, the match was something of a disappointment, with the final score, 7-4 in Spassky's favor, telling most of the story. The first game saw Spassky play the periodically discredited and rehabilitated Marshall Gambit in the Ruy Lopez, and draw rather easily. The second, however, was vastly encouraging to Tal and his many fans, because, when Spassky went astray in some typical Tal complications, it showed that he too could be had:

### **Sicilian Defense**

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Tal 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-K3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-QR3; 5 N-QB3, Q-B2; 6 B-Q3, N-QB3; 7 B-K3, N-B3; 8 0-0, P-QN4; 9 N-N3, B-K2; 10 P-B4, P-Q3; 11 Q-B3, 0-0; 12 P-QR4, P-N5; 13 N-K2, P-K4!; 14 P-B5, P-Q4; 15 N-N3, N-QR4; 16 PxP, B-N2; 17 N-K4, N-B5; 18 B-N5, NxNP; 19 P-Q6?, QxQP!; 20 NxQ, BxQ; 21 RxB, BxN; 22 BxN, PxB; 23 B-K4, QR-B1; 24 P-R5, B-N1!; 25 P-N3, KR-Q1; 26 R-K1, B-R2ch; 27 K-N2, R-Q3; 28 R/3-B1, N-B5; 29 K-R3, N-K6; 30 R-B3, NxQBP; 31 R-QB1, R-B5; 32 R-Q3, B-Q5; 33 RxN, RxR; 34 RxB, PxR; 35 BxR, P-Q6; 36 B-Q1, R-Q4; 37 K-N4, R-K4; 38 K-B4, R-K7; 39 P-R4, P-R4; 40 N-B5, R-K8; 41 BxP, and White resigns

Spassky won the third game, however, to tie the score, and then, after five consecutive draws (in two of which Spassky was Black in the Marshall Gambit), Tal secured a big advantage in the ninth game, but first let it slip away and then blundered badly, allowing Spassky to gain the lead:

### **Ruy Lopez**

*White:* Tal *Black:* Spassky 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 0-0, B-K2; 6 R-K1, P-QN4; 7 B-N3, 0-0; 8 P-QR4 (*Anything to avoid the Marshall. The seventh*

*game had gone 8 P-B3, P-Q4!?*; 9 PxP, NxP; 10 NxP, NxN; 11 RxN, P-QB3; 12 BxN, PxB; 13 P-Q4, B-Q3; 14 R-K3, Q-R5; 15 P-KR3, Q-B5; 16 R-K5, Q-B3; 17 R-K1, Q-N3; 18 Q-B3, B-K3 and White could make nothing of his extra pawn.), P-N5; 9 P-B3, P-Q3; 10 P-R5, PxP; 11 QPxP, B-K3; 12 QN-Q2, R-N1; 13 B-B2, N-R4; 14 N-B1, P-N3; 15 N-K3, B-B3; 16 N-Q5, B-N2; 17 B-Q3, R-R1; 18 N-N5, B-B1; 19 B-QB4, P-R3; 20 N-B3, B-K3; 21 Q-Q3, N-N1; 22 B-K3, N-KB3; 23 KR-Q1 (*23 NxNch!, QxN; 24 B-Q5!+-*), BxN; 24 BxB, NxN; 25 QxN, N-Q2; 26 Q-B4 (*P-QN4!*), K-R2; 27 R-R4, P-KB4; 28 P-KN3, Q-B1!; 29 Q-K2? (*29 PxP, PxP; 30 Q-R4±.*), PxP—+; 30 RxKP, Q-N2; 31 N-Q2, QxP; 32 Q-Q3, Q-N1!; 33 R-KR4, N-B3; 34 N-B3, Q-K1; 35 R-K1 (*Q-B4!*), Q-Q2; 36 P-N4, QR-K1; 37 BxP, BxB; 38 P-N5, N-R4; 39 PxP, Q-B4; 40 QxQ, RxQ; 41 N-Q2, N-B5 (*This was the sealed move—Black is about to be a pawn ahead and wins without difficulty.*); 42 N-K4, R-QN1; 43 N-N3, R/4-B1; 44 N-K4, N-K3; 45 P-QB4, R-N7; 46 R-Q1, R-B4; 47 P-B5, P-Q4; 48 RxP, R-N8ch; 49 K-N2, N-B5ch; 50 RxN, RxR; 51 RxP, KxP; 52 R-K6, R-K8; 53 P-B3, R-K6; 54 RxP, R/KxP; 55 R-QB6, R-QR6; 56 N-N3, R-R7ch; 57 K-N1, R/B-B7; 58 N-B1, R-B2; 59 N-K3, K-N4; 60 P-R6, R-K2; 61 N-B1, K-R3; 62 P-R3, K-N2; 63 P-R4, K-B2; 64 P-R5, PxP; 65 R-R6, R-K4; 66 R-R7ch, K-N3; 67 RxP, R-N4ch; 68 K-R1, R-R8; 69 P-R7, RxNch; 70 K-R2, R-R8; Resigns

After this, Tal's resistance was feeble, and Spassky won the next two games, at long last becoming the world championship candidate that everybody predicted he would be ten years before. Although Petrosian was a formidable customer by anybody's standards, there seemed little doubt that the young challenger would win. Why this was so can be explained in two words: wishful thinking.

Apart from his native Armenia, where he was revered (a short time after he became world champion a set of triplets were born in Erevan, and named Tigran, Vartan, and Petros), most chess fans regarded him with indifference or worse. His style, which had always appeared rather ponderous and abstruse, became even more so after he won the title, and his cautious approach contrasted unfavorably with Spassky's powerful and dynamic play. Thus, most

people, including most experts, who picked Spassky to win thought that he would for no better reason than that they wanted him to.

What they had overlooked, however, was Petrosian's ability to impose his will on the contest, to make Spassky play his kind of chess. The match began on April 11 at the Estrada Theater in Moscow, and the result of the first game was a draw. So were the next five, and it was soon obvious that the challenger also was taking few chances. In the seventh game, however, Petrosian maneuvered skillfully to take the lead:

### Queen's Pawn Opening

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Petrosian 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 N-KB3, P-K3; 3 B-N5, P-Q4; 4 QN-Q2, B-K2; 5 P-K3, QN-Q2; 6 B-Q3, P-B4; 7 P-B3, P-QN3; 8 O-O, B-N2; 9 N-K5, NxN; 10 PxN, N-Q2; 11 B-KB4, Q-B2; 12 N-B3, P-KR3; 13 P-QN4, P-KN4; 14 B-N3, P-KR4; 15 P-KR4, PxP; 16 B-B4, O-O-O; 17 P-R4, P-B5; 18 B-K2, P-R3; 19 K-R1, QR-N1; 20 R-KN1, R-N5; 21 Q-Q2, R/1-N1; 22 P-R5, P-N4; 23 QR-Q1, B-B1; 24 N-R2, NxP!; 25 NxR, PxN; 26 P-K4, B-Q3; 27 Q-K3, N-Q2; 28 BxB, QxB; 29 R-Q4, P-K4; 30 R-Q2, P-B4; 31 PxQP, P-B5; 32 Q-K4, N-B3; 33 Q-B5ch, K-N1; 34 P-B3, B-B1; 35 Q-N1, P-N6; 36 R-K1, P-R6; 37 B-B1, R-R1; 38 PxP, BxP; 39 K-N1, BxB; 40 KxB, P-K5; 41 Q-Q1 and White Resigns

The eighth and ninth games were also drawn, but the tenth produced some real fireworks:

#### KING'S INDIAN DEFENSE

*White:* Petrosian *Black:* Spassky

1 N-KB3	N-KB3	4 B-N2	O-O	7 P-Q4
2 P-KN3	P-KN3	5 O-O	N-B3	
3 P-QB4	B-N2	6 N-B3	P-Q3	

Transposing into a well-known line of the King's Indian Defense; this was one of the few games of the match in which the players did not steer the opening into some uncharted byway.

7	P-QR3	8 P-Q5	N-QR4	9 N-Q2	P-B4
---	-------	--------	-------	--------	------

To anticipate the threat of P-QN4, trapping the (theoretically) misplaced knight. The worth of Black's defensive system depends on whether it can be demonstrated that his queen's knight serves a useful purpose on QR4.

10 Q-B2 P-K4

The alternative, 10 . . . R-N1; 11 P-N3, P-QN4; 12 B-N2 does not appear to afford Black sufficient counterchances.

11 P-N3

In the third game of the 1957 Botvinnik-Smyslov match, Botvinnik played here 11 P-QR3, but after 11 . . . P-N3; 12 P-QN4, N-N2 the position soon became quite drawish. Perhaps White's best move is the obvious 11 PxPep. The game Korchnoi-Kuzmin, Talinn, 1965, continued 11 PxPep, BxP; 12 P-N3, P-Q4; 13 PxP, NxQP; 14 B-N2, N-QB3; 15 NxN, BxN; 16 QBxB, KxB; 17 Q-N2ch, K-N1; 18 N-K4, BxN; 19 BxB with advantage to White.

11 N-N5

A maneuver introduced by Gligorich, the idea of which is both to play . . . P-B4 and to provoke White to weaken his king-side by P-KR3.

12 P-K4

If 12 P-KR3, Black plays 12 . . . N-R3, followed by . . . P-B4 and . . . N-B2.

12	P-B4	13 PxP	PxP	14 N-Q1	P-N4
----	------	--------	-----	---------	------

Of course not 14 . . . P-K5; 15 B-N2, B-Q5; 16 BxB, PxP; 17 P-N4 winning a piece.

15 P-B3	P-K5	16 B-N2
---------	------	---------

After 16 PxN, BxR; 17 PxP, B-Q5ch; 18 K-R1, BxP; 19 NxP White has insufficient compensation for the exchange.

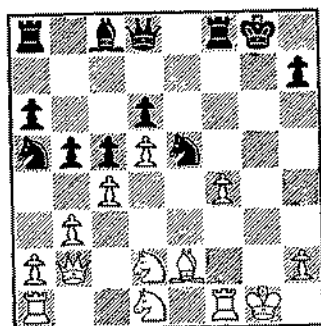
16	PxP	18 QxB	N-K4
17 BxP	BxB	19 B-K2	P-B5!

Given time, White would play N-K3-N2-B4 and take advantage in rather routine fashion of Black's many positional weaknesses; hence it is necessary for Black to operate as actively as possible to assure himself adequate counterplay.

20 NPxP



SPASSKY



PETROSIAN

20 B-R6

But the text move is a serious tactical error: with 20... RxP! Black can retain excellent chances: 21 N-K3 (21 RxR, Q-N4ch; 22 K-R1, QxR; 23 N-QB3, Q-Q5!), Q-N4ch; 22 K-R1, RxRch; 23 N/3xR, B-N5!; 24 N-K4, Q-B5; 25 N/1-N3, B-B6ch; 26 BxB, QxBch etc.

21 N-K3! BxR

Now 21... RxP leads to a strong attack for White: 22 RxR, Q-N4ch; 23 R-N4!, BxR; 24 NxB, NxN; 25 BxN, QxBch; 26 K-R1. But it is much better for Black to decline the sacrifice with 21... N-N3; 22 R-B3!, Q-R5!; 23 P-B5, N-K4; 24 R-N3ch, K-B2! with a fair game.

22 RxB N-N3 23 B-N4! NxKBP

After 23... Q-B3; 24 B-K6ch, K-R1; 25 QxQch, RxQ; 26 P-B5, N-K4; 27 N-K4 Black is lost. However, 23... P-R3 is somewhat better than the text.

24 RxN! RxR 25 B-K6ch R-B2 26 N-K4 Q-R5

Or 26... R/1-R2; 27 N-B5!

27 NxQP Q-N4ch

After 27... Q-K8ch; 28 K-N2, QxN; 29 BxRch, K-B1; 30 Q-R8ch, K-K2; 31 N-B5ch, KxB; 32 QxPch etc. White wins easily.

28 K-R1 R/1-R2 29 BxRch RxB 30 Q-R8ch! Resigns

Two points down now, Spassky found his best attempts thwarted at every turn. The eleventh game was a short draw, the twelfth an excellent fight:

## King's Indian Defense

White: Petrosian Black: Spassky 1 N-KB3, P-KN3; 2 P-B4, B-N2; 3 P-Q4, P-Q3; 4 N-B3, QN-Q2; 5 P-K4, P-K3; 6 B-K2, P-N3; 7 O-O, B-N2; 8 B-K3, N-K2; 9 Q-B2, P-KR3; 10 QR-Q1, O-O; 11 P-Q5, P-K4; 12 Q-B1, K-R2; 13 P-KN3 P-KB4; 14 PxP, NxBP; 15 B-Q3, B-B1; 16 K-N2, N-B3; 17 N-K4, N-R4; 18 B-Q2, B-Q2; 19 K-R1, N-K2; 20 N-R4, B-R6; 21 R-N1, B-Q2; 22 B-K3, Q-K1; 23 QR-K1, Q-B2; 24 Q-B2, K-R1; 25 N-Q2, N-B4; 26 NxN, PxN; 27 P-KN4, P-K5; 28 PxN, P-B5; 29 RxB, QxR; 30 R-KN1, Q-K4; 31 N-B3, PxKB; 32 NxQ, PxQ; 33 B-Q4, PxN; 34 BxPch, K-R2; 35 R-N7ch, K-R1; 36 R-B7ch, K-N1; 37 R-N7ch, K-R1; 38 R-N6ch, K-R2; 39 R-N7ch, Drawn

In the thirteenth game the challenger finally scored his first win, and so was only one game behind. He tried to make up that deficit, however, by steering the openings into more and more unconventional channels; Petrosian, instead of trying to refute his opponent's risky play, settled every time for a small but safe advantage, as in the fourteenth game (Petrosian playing White): 1 N-KB3, N-KB3; 2 P-KN3, P-QN4?!; 3 P-QR4, P-N5; 4 P-Q3, B-N2; 5 P-K4, P-Q3; 6 B-N2, QN-Q2; 7 O-O, P-K3; 8 P-R5, R-QN1; 9 QN-Q2, B-K2; 10 N-B4, O-O; 11 R-K1, P-QR3; 12 B-B4, B-R1; 13 Q-K2, R-K1; 14 P-R3 etc. And also in the sixteenth: 1 P-Q4, P-KN3; 2 P-K4, B-N2; 3 N-KB3, P-Q3; 4 B-K2, P-K3; 5 P-B3, N-Q2; 6 O-O, N-K2; 7 QN-Q2, P-N3; 8 P-QR4, P-QR3; 9 R-K1, B-N2; 10 B-Q3, O-O; 11 N-B4, Q-K1; 12 B-Q2, P-KB3; 13 Q-K2 etc.

In the nineteenth game Spassky finally tied the score with a good win, but it was almost as if, in doing so, he had finally shot his bolt; Petrosian then won the twentieth, drew the twenty-first, and won the twenty-second, assuring himself at least a tie match. It was then decided, although the title was no longer at stake, to play the last two games anyway: the twenty-third was a now meaningless win for Spassky, the twenty-fourth a draw, and so victory went to Petrosian by the final score of 12½-11½.

If both the outcome and to some extent the play of the 1966 World Championship match was a disappointment to nearly everyone, the beginnings of the next series of events to select Petrosian's next challenger was little short of a catastrophe. The 1967 Inter-

zonal tournament had been awarded to, of all places, Sousse, Tunisia, but at first any apprehension that the Tunisian Chess Federation, which had never assumed responsibility for an international event before, let alone one so important as an Interzonal, might not be up to all that was required of it was snowed under by the widespread interest and enthusiasm at the news that Bobby Fischer would participate. He had come out of his self-imposed isolation late in 1965 and had participated in a few events with mixed results since then; but he was of course among the favorites to qualify for the Candidates'. Why he didn't is perhaps best explained by a lengthy report, to the United States Chess Federation, by its Executive Director Ed Edmondson, and published in *Chess Life* (the official organ of the Federation) in its issue of February 1968, from which the following account is extracted:

SEPTEMBER 10: Mr. Ridha Belkadi, President of the Tunisian Chess Federation and of the Organizing Committee, transmitted to all Federations the Calendar of the 1967 Interzonal. With the exception of Round 1, Monday, October 16, the schedule was arranged so that there were rounds on Tuesdays, Wednesdays, and Thursdays; Fridays were free; rounds again on Saturdays and Sundays; and Mondays free. Exceptions to this schedule of a free day after each second or third round applied to Reshevsky and Fischer and were thought to be necessary to fully accommodate their religious beliefs. [Reshevsky is an Orthodox Jew and Fischer a member of a fundamentalist Christian sect; both observe the Sabbath.]

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 15: Fischer and Reshevsky started the tournament early, playing their opponents from Round 3 so they could be excused on Wednesday, October 18, a religious holiday for both of them.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 16, THROUGH TUESDAY, OCTOBER 24: The first seven rounds were completed as per the schedule distributed by Mr. Belkadi on September 10.

WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 25: Round 8 was scheduled for this date, but Fischer's game against Korchnoi was postponed (as per September 10 schedule) until October 30 because Fischer was observing a religious holiday from sundown October 25

until sundown October 26. Also—and Fischer considered this unnecessary—his Round 9 game from the next day (Thursday, October 26, against Geller) was postponed until November 6.

THURSDAY, OCTOBER 26: Feeling that it was not only to his best interest but also better for everyone concerned, and considering that the oral suggestions he had made on the two preceding days had perhaps been misunderstood [the tournament director spoke no English and Fischer no French], Fischer proposed in writing that the schedule be readjusted to avoid postponement of his game. . . . On October 26 Tournament Director Hentati replied in writing as follows: "I acknowledge receipt of your letter dated October 26, 1967, and would like to inform you that the Organization Committee of the Interzonal Tournament regrets its inability to grant your request." That was all. No proposal for solving the problem in some way other than that suggested by Fischer; no explanation of why nothing could (or would) be done; no *communication* between the officials and the contestant.

FRIDAY, OCTOBER 27: The question lay dormant, with no action by the officials and with Fischer's Rounds 8 and 9 being postponed. As a result, Fischer informed the Tournament Director in writing that he would have to withdraw because his recommendations on tournament conditions were being ignored and because of the hardship imposed by games on six consecutive days later in the tournament after the unnecessary postponement of his Round 9 game. . . .

[On Saturday, October 28, Fischer's clock was started by the Tournament Director and one hour later he was forfeited for failing to appear and a point awarded to his ostensible opponent, Avar Gipslis of the Soviet Union—a precipitate and technically illegal procedure that was to have an unfortunate result in further negotiations.]

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 29: Mr. Belkadi went from Sousse to Tunis and visited Fischer in his hotel room. After prolonged discussion [in broken English on Belkadi's part, apparently] Fischer agreed to return to Sousse and reenter the tournament. He did so after Mr. Belkadi promised that a free day or two would be

arranged so that Fischer need not play on six consecutive days; he also promised either to have the lighting improved [another disputed matter] or to arrange for Fischer's games to be played in another room. . . . Fischer then returned to the tournament just in time to play his Round 11 game against Reshevsky.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 30: Fischer played his postponed game from Round 8, drawing against Korchnoi.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 31: Round 12 was played on schedule by all competitors, Fischer defeating [Robert] Byrne. *He had scored 7 wins and 3 draws, with one game postponed and one (Gipslis) still a bone of contention. His nearest competitor, with two more games already played, trailed with an 8-4 score.*

WEDNESDAY, NOVEMBER 1: Playing the remainder of his games with the Gipslis uncertainty hanging in midair was certainly not desirable, and Fischer pressed for a decision by the Referee.

*Because the officials never did respond to certain queries put to them by USCF on Fischer's behalf, we must rely on hearsay regarding a very important matter. Hearsay has the Soviets informing the tournament officials that all four USSR entrants would be withdrawn from the Interzonal if the Fischer-Gipslis game were actually played. If such a threat was made, even by implication, it helps to explain what happened next.*

Jaroslav Sajtar of Czechoslovakia had just begun his stint as Referee of the last half of the tournament. He informed Fischer that the Gipslis forfeit was irrevocable. Upon hearing this, and in view of the fact that the promised free day had not yet been scheduled and the promise of improved lighting had not been kept, Fischer withdrew for a second time. . . .

After further negotiations, partly by long-distance telephone from the United States, partly with the participation of the U.S. Embassy in Tunis, Fischer returned to America, amid a storm of hostile publicity ("The chess world certainly would not like to see a wonder-boy of chess develop into a monster-boy World Champion" is one sample of what the papers were saying about him). Nevertheless, the USCF report, which puts much, it not all, of the blame on the Tunisian tournament officials, makes convinc-

ing reading. Certainly they could have made far more strenuous efforts to smooth matters over. They had in fact done almost nothing to that end, and much, from whatever motives, to exacerbate the difficulties. Once again Fischer's quest for the world championship had met with a sharp check.

The tournament itself, overshadowed by the Fischer affair, ended in triumph for Bent Larsen, with a score of 15½-5½. Tied at 14-7 were Geller, Gligorich, and Korchnoi, and Portisch was clear fifth with 13½-7½. Once again Leonid Stein found himself in a playoff for the last qualifying place, this time with Hort and Reshevsky, all of whom scored 13-8; the playoff, held in Los Angeles a month later, saw Reshevsky claim the last qualifying spot.

The pairings for the quarter-final round of the Candidates' matches were Spassky (seeded, of course) vs. Geller, Tal (also seeded because of his second-place finish in the previous Candidates') vs. Gligorich, Korchnoi vs. Reshevsky, and Larsen vs. Portisch.

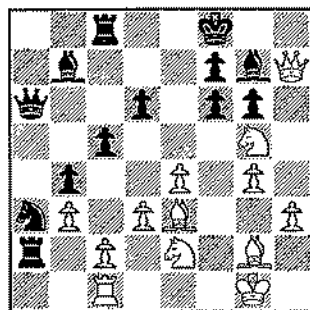
Spassky vs. Geller was held at Sukhimi on the Black Sea coast beginning on April 2. The result was as expected: an easy victory for Spassky by 5½-2½. Spassky drew the three games in which he had the Black pieces and won three out of four with White (drawing the fourth) with the same variation of the Closed Sicilian; the sixth game was the most convincing:

### **Sicilian Defense**

*White: Spassky Black: Geller 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-QB3, P-Q3; 3 P-KN3, N-QB3; 4 B-N2, P-KN3; 5 P-Q3, B-N2; 6 P-B4, N-B3 (Geller finally abandoned this move in the eighth game, trying instead 6 . . . P-K3 followed by 7 . . . KN-K2, and drew rather easily.); 7 N-B3, 0-0; 8 0-0, R-N1; 9 P-KR3 (In the second game Spassky had played 9 N-KR4 here but after 9 . . . N-Q5; 10 P-B5, P-QN4; 11 B-N5, P-N5; 12 N-N1, N-Q2; 13 N-Q2, N-K4; 14 K-R1, P-QR4; 15 R-QN1, P-R5; 16 KN-B3, KNxN; 17 NxN, N-N4; 18 Q-Q2, P-R6; 19 NPxP, NxP Black had the initiative.), P-QN4; 10 P-R3, P-QR4; 11 B-K3, P-N5; 12 PxP, RPxP; 13 N-K2,*

B-N2; 14 P-N3 (In the fourth game Spassky had played more accurately: 14 Q-Q2, R-R1; 15 QR-N1, Q-R4; 16 P-N3, but even here Geller might have equalized with 16 . . . P-Q4.), R-R1; 15 R-B1, R-R7; 16 P-N4, Q-R1? (16 . . . P-K3!; 17 P-B5?, KPxP; 18 KPxP, R-K1=); 17 Q-K1, Q-R3; 18 Q-B2, N-R2; 19 P-B5, N-N4; 20 PxP, RPxP (BPxP!); 21 N-N5, N-R6; 22 Q-R4, R-B1; 23 RxN!, PxR; 24 Q-R7ch, K-B1;

GELLER



SPASSKY

25 NxP!, RxP (25 . . . KxN; 26 B-R6, R-KN1; 27 N-B4, RxP; 28 R-B1+-); 26 B-R6, RxRch (26 . . . RxN; 27 QxBch, K-K1; 28 N-N5, PxN; 29 BxP++); 27 NxR, KxN (27 . . . BxB; 28 NxB, K-K1; 29 N-N8, K-B1; 30 N-K7 with mate to follow.) 28 QxBch, K-K1; 29 P-N5, P-B4; 30 QxPch, K-Q2; 31 Q-B7ch, K-B3; 32 PxPch, Resigns

The Tal vs. Gligorich match began in Belgrade on April 21, with Tal a heavy favorite; it was, however, Gligorich who jumped into the lead with a victory in the first game, and held it with four consecutive draws. The sixth game was the turning point:

### Bogolubov-Indian Defense

White: Tal Black: Gligorich 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-KB3, B-N5ch; 4 B-Q2, P-QR4; 5 N-B3, 0-0; 6 P-K3, P-Q3; 7

Q-B2, QN-Q2; 8 P-QR3, BxN; 9 BxB, Q-K2; 10 B-K2, P-R5; 11 0-0, P-QN3; 12 N-Q2, B-N2; 13 P-K4?, P-B4!; 14 P-K5, N-K1; 15 P-B4, BPxP; 16 BxP, PxP; 17 PxP, NxP!; 18 BxP, N-Q3; 19 B-Q4? (Q-B3!), N-B4; 20 BxN, Q-B4ch; 21 R-B2, QxB; 22 N-B3, Q-B4; 23 Q-B3, KR-Q1; 24 Q-N4, Q-R2; 25 P-B5, QR-N1; 26 Q-B3, QR-B1; 27 R-Q1, RxRch; 28 BxR, RxP; 29 Q-N4, B-B3; 30 Q-KB4, R-Q4; 31 B-K2, P-R3; 32 N-K5, B-R1; 33 P-KN4, P-N4; 34 Q-B4, RxN; Resigns.

Tal went on to score 2½ points out of the next three games to emerge the winner by 5½-3½.

The Korchnoi vs. Reshevsky match, held at Amsterdam, began on May 2 and resulted in an easy victory for Korchnoi by 5½-2½. Reshevsky, who was making what was probably his last appearance in world championship competition, was in terrible form, and was left at the end with only vain regrets that he had never managed to bring about a match against Botvinnik sometime in the '50's, when he would undoubtedly have had excellent chances to win the title. As it is, he joins Keres and Bronstein as one who in modern times has come within hailing distance of the title only to lose out at the last moment.

As expected, the Larsen-Portisch match turned out to be the most sternly contested of the quarter-finals. It was played at Porec, Yugoslavia, and began on May 6 with a draw. Larsen won the second and third games, and Portisch the fourth, and then followed four draws. The ninth game was also a draw, but Portisch, who had a win at adjournment, was so upset by the result that in the tenth he fell an easy prey to one of Larsen's offbeat opening lines and so lost by 6-4. The tenth game:

### Vienna

White: Larsen Black: Portisch 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-QB3, N-QB3; 3 B-B4, N-B3; 4 P-Q3, N-QR4; 5 KN-K2, NxB; 6 PxN, B-K2; 7 0-0, P-Q3; 8 P-QN3, 0-0; 9 N-N3, P-B3; 10 B-N2, Q-R4; 11 Q-K1, Q-B2; 12 P-QR4, B-K3; 13 R-Q1, P-QR3; 14 Q-K2, B-N5;

15 P-B3, B-Q2; 16 K-R1, QR-N1; 17 N-B5, BxN; 18 PxR, KR-K1; 19 R-Q2, QR-Q1; 20 KR-Q1, N-R4?; 21 B-R3!, N-B5; 22 Q-B2, Q-R4?; 23 N-K4, P-Q4; 24 BxB, RxB; 25 Q-R4!, R/2-Q2; 26 P-N3, N-K7; 27 P-B6, Q-N5; 28 Q-N4, Resigns

The pairings for the semifinal round were Tal-Korchnoi and Spassky-Larsen. About one of them there was virtual unanimity among the experts—Tal stood no chance, or, at best, only a very little one, against Korchnoi. The reason? Tal's previous encounters with Korchnoi, in which the score stood at nine wins for Korchnoi, only one for Tal, and eleven draws. Plainly, if one top player ever had the Indian Sign on another . . .

Korchnoi won all right, but the score was much closer than anyone expected. The first three games were drawn, Tal missing an easy win in the third. Korchnoi won the next two, however, and looked about to assert his apparant mastery of Tal's style, but the sixth game called a halt to his plans, at least temporarily:

### Catalan System

*White:* Korchnoi *Black:* Tal 1 N-KB3, N-KB3; 2 P-B4, P-K3; 3 P-KN3, P-Q4; 4 B-N2, B-K2; 5 0-0, 0-0; 6 P-Q4, PxP; 7 Q-B2, P-QR3; 8 P-QR4 (8 QxP, P-QN4; 9 Q-N3, B-N2; 10 R-Q1, QN-Q2; 11 B-N5, P-B4; 12 PxP, Q-B2; 13 QN-Q2, BxP=.), N-B3 (P-B4!); 9 QxP (9 R-Q1, N-QR4; 10 QN-Q2, P-QN4; 11 PxP, PxP; 12 P-N3±), Q-Q4; 10 QN-Q2, R-Q1; 11 P-K3, Q-KR4; 12 P-K4!?, B-Q2; 13 P-N3, P-QN4; 14 Q-B3, PxP; 15 PxP, B-N5; 16 Q-B2, QR-B1; 17 N-B4±, B-K1; 18 P-R3? (B-N2!), RxP!; 19 P-N4? (19 NxR, NxN; 20 Q-Q1, QxQ; 21 RxQ, N-K7ch; 22 K-R1, N-B6 with an unclear position), Q-QB4; 20 NxR, NxN; 21 Q-Q3, R-Q1; 22 B-N2 (B-K3!), P-K4; 23 KR-QB1, (KR-Q1!), Q-K2; 24 BxN, RxB; 25 Q-KN3, Q-K3!; 26 Q-N3 (26 QxP?, RxN; 27 QxQ, RxRch), P-QR4; 27 Q-B2, P-B4; 28 N-K3, B-B3; 29 R-Q1, P-N3; 30 P-B3, P-B5; 31 Q-K2 (31 RxR, PxR; 32 NxP, B-B6; 33 N-N2, N-Q2—+), B-B4, 32 K-R1, P-B6; 33 N-B2, RxRP; 34 Q-Q3, B-Q5 (B-N5!); 35 P-B4, RxR; 36 RxR, B-N3;

37 R-QN1, B-B4; 38 P-B5 (38 QxP!, NxKP; 39 R-N8ch, K-N2; 40 QxPch+—), Q-Q2; 39 QxP, NxKP; 40 QxKP, B-Q3 (40 . . . N-B7ch!; 41 K-R2, B-Q3; 42 R-N8ch, BxR; 43 QxBch, Q-K1!—+); 41 QxP? (41 R-N8ch, BxR; 42 QxBch, K-N2; 43 Q-K5ch, N-B3; 44 N-K3 with drawing chances), B-B2; 42 Q-N4, Q-Q6; Resigns

With this victory it looked as if Tal was about to stage a comeback, but the remaining four games of the match, although hard-fought, were all drawn, leaving Korchnoi the winner by 5½-4½.

The Larsen-Spassky match, on the other hand, played at Malmoe, Sweden, beginning on July 5, was supposed to be very close, but in the event Spassky began with three straight wins, and ended up an easy victor by 5½-2½. The fourth game was a draw and the fifth a win for Larsen, but then, after a draw in the sixth, Spassky won the seventh and drew the eighth to move on to the final. His best effort came in the third game:

### Sicilian Defense

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Larsen 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-QB3, P-Q3; 3 P-KN3, P-KN3; 4 B-N2, B-N2; 5 P-Q3, N-QB3; 6 P-B4, P-K3; 7 N-B3, KN-K2; 8 0-0, 0-0; 9 B-Q2, R-N1; 10 R-N1, P-QN4; 11 P-QR3, P-QR4; 12 P-QR4, P-N5; 13 N-QN5, P-Q4; 14 P-B4, PxPep; 15 NPxP, P-B5; 16 B-K3, BPxP; 17 P-K5, B-QR3; 18 QxP, Q-Q2; 19 KR-Q1, KR-B1; 20 Q-Q2, N-B4; 21 B-B2, P-R4; 22 B-B1, R-Q1; 23 B-Q3, Q-K2; 24 Q-K2, R-N2; 25 P-R3, P-R5; 26 NxP, NxN; 27 PxN, B-R3; 28 B-N3, Q-B4ch; 29 K-R2, N-K2; 30 P-R5, N-B4; 31 PxP, PxP; 32 BxN, KPxB; 33 P-B4, P-Q5; 34 N-Q6, RxR; 35 RxR, P-Q6; 36 QxP, KBxP; 37 Q-Q5ch, QxQ; 38 PxQ, B-K6; 39 B-R4, B-B5ch; 40 K-N2, B-Q6; 41 R-N6, P-N4; 42 B-N3, BxB; 43 KxB, B-B7; 44 R-N2, P-B5ch; 45 K-N4, BxP; 46 KxP, P-B6; 47 N-K4, K-B1; 48 N-B6, B-Q8; 49 R-N7, P-B7; 50 P-K6, RxPch; 51 K-R6, R-R4ch; 52 K-N6, Resigns

The final match, Spassky vs. Korchnoi, took place at Kiev, starting September 6. Opinions were very much mixed about who had

the better chances; many accorded a slight edge to Spassky because he had won so convincingly against Larsen, but Korchnoi's long record of erratic play made any prediction uncertain. The first game was a quiet draw, but Spassky won the second when Korchnoi blundered in time trouble. The third, with Korchnoi enjoying the initiative throughout, was drawn, and then Spassky again won with the Black pieces to take a two-point lead. There followed a draw in the fifth game, then a win for Korchnoi when Spassky botched what could have been his best performance of this Candidates' by careless play in the latter stages. Obviously the seventh game was crucial—could Korchnoi take advantage of Spassky's inevitable disappointment at his loss of the sixth game to come back and tie the match in the seventh? It was his inability to recover from bad defeats of just that kind that had proved Spassky's biggest weakness over the years.

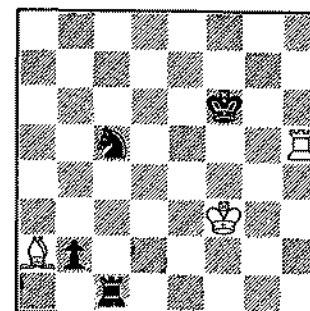
### King's Indian Defense

*White: Spassky Black: Korchnoi* 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, B-N2; 4 P-K4, P-Q3; 5 P-B3, O-O; 6 B-K3, N-B3; 7 KN-K2, P-QR3; 8 N-B1, P-K4; 9 P-Q5, N-Q5; 10 N-N3, NxN; 11 QxN, P-B4; 12 PxPep, PxP; 13 O-O-O, B-K3 (13... Q-K2!; 14 P-B5?, P-Q4!; 15 PxP, PxP; 16 NxP, NxN; 17 QxN, R-N1± or 13... Q-K2!; 14 Q-N6, B-N2!); 14 Q-R3, N-K1 (14... P-Q4; 15 BPxP, PxP; 16 PxP, NxP; 17 B-QB4, R-B1; 18 BxN, BxB; 19 K-N1+—); 15 P-R4!, P-B3?; 16 P-B5!, R-B2; 17 Q-R4, Q-B2; 18 B-QB4, BxB; 19 QxB, B-B1; 20 P-R5!, PxBP; 21 PxP, PxP; 22 Q-K6, R-Q1 (22... N-Q3; 23 BxP, N-N4; 24 BxB, RxB; 25 R-R6+—); 23 RxR, QxR; 24 R-Q1 (QxQBP!), Q-K2; 25 QxQBP, N-B2; 26 Q-N6, K-N2; 27 N-Q5, Q-K3; 28 BxP, BxB; 29 QxB, N-N4; 30 Q-K3, Q-B3ch; 31 K-N1, N-Q5; 32 R-QB1, Q-N4; 33 N-B7, Q-K7; 34 N-K6ch, K-R2; 35 Q-R6ch!, Resigns

Spassky won the next game also, and the match ended with two draws, making the final score 6-3 in Spassky's favor. Once again he was the challenger to Petrosian, and once again the hopes of the vast majority of the world's chess players were with him.

The match began at the Estrada Theater in Moscow on April 14, 1969. Despite Spassky's hopes, the first game went badly for him. After struggling manfully to equalize in an inferior ending, he reached the following position

PETROSIAN



SPASSKY

when he might have drawn by 52 K-K3, N-R5; 53 R-R4, N-B6; 54 R-QN4. Instead, he cashed a bum check: 52 R-R6ch, and lost after 52... K-K4; 53 R-QN6, N-R5; 54 R-K6ch, K-Q5; 55 R-K4ch, K-B4; 56 RxN, R-QR8; Resigns.

The next two games were drawn, the second when the challenger as Black played the antiquated Tarrasch Defense to the Queen's Gambit and Petrosian could do nothing against it. The fourth game was also a Tarrasch Defense, and this time Spassky won (see the annotations to game eighteen, below).

In the fifth game, Spassky went ahead:

### Queen's Gambit Declined

*White: Spassky Black: Petrosian* 1 P-QB4, N-KB3; 2 N-QB3, P-K3; 3 N-B3, P-Q4; 4 P-Q4, P-B4; 5 BPxP, NxP; 6 P-K4, NxN; 7 PxN, PxP; 8 PxP, B-N5ch; 9 B-Q2, BxBch; 10 QxB, O-O; 11 B-B4, N-B3; 12 O-O, P-QN3; 13 QR-Q1 (The eighteenth game of the 1937 Alekhine-Euwe match went 13 KR-Q1, B-N2; 14 Q-B4, R-

B1; 15 P-Q5, PxP; 16 BxP= . The move Spassky plays was recommended by Botvinnik. ), B-N2; 14 KR-K1, R-B1 (N-R4!); 15 P-Q5, PxP (15 . . . N-R4; 16 PxP, QxQ; 17 PxPch, K-R1; 18 NxQ, NxB; 19 NxN, RxN; 20 P-K5, B-B1; 21 P-K6, BxP; 22 Rx B, P-N3; 23 R-K7, R-QR5=—analysis by Korchnoi); 16 BxP, N-R4 (Q-K2!); 17 Q-B4, Q-B2; 18 Q-B5, BxB?!; 19 Px B, Q-B7; 20 Q-B4, QxP; 21 P-Q6, QR-Q1; 22 P-Q7, Q-B5; 23 Q-B5, P-KR3; 24 R-QB1, Q-R3; 25 R-B7, P-QN4; 26 N-Q4, Q-QN3; 27 R-B8, N-B5 (27 . . . QxN; 28 RxR++ or 27 . . . P-R3; 28 R-K8, QxN; 29 RxRch, RxR; 30 RxRch, KxR; 31 Q-B5ch++.); 28 N-B6, N-Q3; 29 NxR, NxQ; 30 N-B6, Resigns

After two more draws, Spassky scored another win in the eighth game to go two up. Petrosian rallied, however, winning the tenth and eleventh, to tie the score. There followed five draws in a row, with the tension mounting steadily—a situation most people took to be to Petrosian's advantage, since he was known to have far the better nerves (some thought his phlegmatic attitude his principal asset). It was the champion who faltered, however, and, in the seventeenth game, Spassky scored a crucial victory:

### Sicilian Defense

White: Spassky Black: Petrosian 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-K3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-QR3; 5 B-Q3, N-QB3; 6 NxN, NPxN; 7 0-0, P-Q4; 8 N-Q2, N-B3; 9 P-QN3, B-N5; 10 B-N2, P-QR4; 11 P-QB3, B-K2; 12 P-QB4, 0-0; 13 Q-B2, P-R3; 14 P-QR3, B-R3; 15 KR-K1, Q-N3; 16 KPxP, BPxP; 17 PxP, BxB; 18 QxB, KR-Q1; 19 N-B4, Q-R3; 20 Q-KB3, RxP; 21 QR-Q1, R-KB4; 22 Q-N3, R-KN4; 23 Q-B7, R-K1; 24 BxN, Px B; 25 R-Q7, R-QB1; 26 Q-N7, QxQ; 27 RxQ, K-B1; 28 P-QR4, B-N5; 29 R-K3, R-Q1; 30 P-N3, R-Q8ch; 31 K-N2, R-QB4; 32 R-KB3, P-B4; 33 P-N4, R-Q5; 34 PxP, PxP; 35 R-N8ch, K-K2; 36 R-K3ch, K-B3; 37 R-N6ch, K-N2; 38 R-N3ch, K-B1; 39 R-N8ch, K-K2; 40 R-K3ch, K-B3; 41 R-N6ch, K-N2; 42 R-N3ch, K-B1; 43 RxP, P-B5; 44 R/3-R3, K-N2; 45 R/6-R5, P-B6ch; 46 K-N3, RxR; 47 RxR, R-

Q6; 48 NxP, K-N3; 49 R-N5, BxN; 50 RxB, RxP; 51 R-R8, R-R6; 52 P-R5, K-N4; 53 P-R6, K-N3; 54 P-R7, K-N2; 55 P-R4, K-R2; 56 P-R5, K-N2; 57 P-R6ch, K-R2; 58 K-B4, Resigns

A point down now, with time running out, Petrosian was compelled to play aggressively in the eighteenth game; he was once again confronted, however, with the challenger's secret weapon, the apparently impregnable Tarrasch Defense:

### QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED

White: Petrosian Black: Spassky

1 P-QB4 P-K3 2 P-Q4 P-Q4 3 N-QB3 P-QB4

This is the Tarrasch Defense, advocated somewhat hyperbolically by its inventor, who called it "the only correct defense to the Queen's Gambit." Whether or not the defense is sound depends on the answer to the age-old question about the isolated queen's pawn: Do the dynamic possibilities afforded by that pawn offset its essential weaknesses? The answer—sometimes.

4 BPxP KPxP 5 N-B3 N-QB3 6 P-KN3

And this is the Rubinstein Variation—the line that put the Tarrasch Defense out of business for about fifty years.

6 N-B3 8 0-0 0-0  
7 B-N2 B-K2 9 B-N5

Long thought to be the strongest move in this position. Other tries, 9 B-B4 and 9 PxP, seem to yield very little in the way of advantage to White.

9 PxP!

Spassky introduced this move in his game against Korchnoi in the XXIV Soviet Championship in 1956. After 9 . . . B-K3; 10 PxP, BxP; 11 BxN, QxB; 12 NxP, QxP; 13 N-B7, QR-Q1; 14 Q-B1!, QxQ; 15 QRxQ as played in the sixteenth game, White still has a small advantage.

10 NxP P-KR3! 11 B-K3 R-K1!

After the less accurate 11 . . . B-KN5; 12 Q-R4!, N-QR4; 13 QR-Q1, N-B5; 14 B-B1, Q-B1; 15 Q-B2, R-Q1; 16 P-N3 White has the better of it—this from the twelfth game.

12 R-B1 B-B1 13 N-N3 B-K3 14 N-N5

White's knight heads for Q4, pointing up one of the weaknesses in Black's position, the fact that this square can no longer be controlled

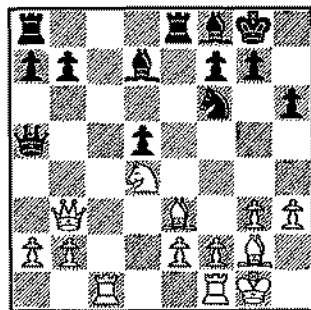
Boris Spassky and the Advent of Bobby Fischer 243



by pawns. However, White may hardly be said to have any advantage here—quite the contrary.

14 B-KN5 16 N/5-Q4 NxN 18 Q-N3 Q-R4  
15 P-KR3 B-B4 17 NxN B-Q2

SPASSKY



PETROSIAN

Now Black has a slight edge, because of the superior mobility of his pieces.

19 P-QR3 B-Q3 21 KR-Q1 Q-K2  
20 Q-Q3 Q-Q1 22 B-Q2

To parry the threat of 22 . . . BxNP.

22 N-K5 24 Q-N3 BxN 26 P-KR4 Q-K4  
23 B-K1 B-K4 25 RxB B-B3 27 Q-K3

Probably 27 P-K3 is slightly better.

27 Q-B3 29 RxR PxR  
28 BxN RxB 30 B-B3 Q-B4

Black's slight advantage is insufficient for victory. The remaining moves were: 31 R-Q1, R-K1; 32 R-Q6, P-B3; 33 R-Q4, P-R3; 34 K-R2, Q-N5; 35 P-R4, K-B2; 36 K-N1, R-K4; 37 R-Q6, R-KB4; 38 P-N3, Q-R6; 39 B-K1, Q-N5; 40 B-B3, Q-R6; 41 B-Q4, P-KR4; 42 B-B3, K-N1; 43 R-Q8ch, K-R2; 44 R-Q6, Q-N5; 45 P-R5, Q-N3; 46 P-QN4, Q-B2; 47 B-Q4, Q-B5; 48 B-B5, R-K4; 49 B-Q4, R-KB4; 50 B-B5, Q-B7; 51 Q-Q2, Q-N6; 52 Q-Q1, Q-N7; 53 Q-Q2, Q-R8ch; 54 Q-Q1, Q-K4; 55 Q-Q4, Q-K1; 56 Q-B4, B-N4; 57 Q-K6, QxQ; 58 RxQ, R-Q4; 59 R-Q6, Draw.

Spassky's ability to equalize with Black against Petrosian's queen's pawn openings was of crucial importance to his success in this match.

The nineteenth game was also a draw, but then Petrosian won the twentieth, to pull within one point of a tie. When the twenty-first game began, it was plain that Spassky still had ample opportunity to fritter away his lead, however:

### Ruy Lopez

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Petrosian 1 P-K4, P-K4; 2 N-KB3, N-QB3; 3 B-N5, P-QR3; 4 B-R4, N-B3; 5 O-O, B-K2; 6 R-K1, P-QN4; 7 B-N3, O-O; 8 P-B3, P-Q3; 9 P-KR3, N-Q2; 10 P-Q4, B-B3; 11 B-K3, N-R4; 12 B-B2, N-B5; 13 B-B1, B-N2; 14 P-QN3, N/5-N3; 15 B-K3, R-K1; 16 P-Q5, R-QB1; 17 QN-Q2, P-B3; 18 P-B4, BPxP; 19 BPxQP, Q-B2; 20 R-QB1, Q-N1; 21 P-QR4, N-B4; 22 PxP, PxP; 23 R-R1, P-N5; 24 Q-K2, N/3-Q2; 25 B-Q3, NxB; 26 QxN, B-R1; 27 N-B4, N-B4; 28 BxN, RxB; 29 R-R4, P-R3; 30 Q-Q2, B-K2; 31 KR-R1, B-N2; 32 QxNP, P-B4; 33 R-R7, R-B2; 34 PxP, Q-B1; 35 N-K3, P-K5; 36 N-Q4, B-KB3; 37 R-KB1, B-R3; 38 RxR, QxR; 39 Q-R4, R-R1; 40 R-Q1, Q-N1; 41 N-B6, Q-N2; 42 QxP, QxP; 43 R-K1, B-B6; 44 R-N1, Q-R7; 45 N-QN4, Q-R5; 46 Q-K6ch, K-R1; 47 QxP, B-K7; 48 N-B6, Q-R7; 49 R-N8ch, RxR; 50 QxRch, K-R2; 51 Q-KN3, B-KR4; 52 K-R2, B-K8; 53 P-B6, Resigns

Now it was all but certain that the title would change hands. The twenty-second and twenty-third games were duly drawn, and Boris Vasilievich Spassky was the new champion of the world. But for how long?

When American champion Robert James Fischer went off to play in the Interzonal tournament at Palma de Mallorca he was accompanied by Ed Edmondson, a retired Air Force colonel who for some years had served as the Executive Director of the United States Chess Federation. His task, a formidable one to be sure,

was to attend to any administrative problems and to assure that Fischer could spend all *his* time attending to problems over the chessboard—in short, to avoid another fiasco such as obtained at Sousse. Colonel Edmondson performed his task admirably—almost as well, in fact, as Fischer did his, and that's saying quite a lot when one notes that Fischer won the tournament by  $3\frac{1}{2}$  (!) points, with a score of  $18\frac{1}{2}$ - $4\frac{1}{2}$ , and only one loss—to Bent Larsen. It is also important to note that he won his last six games in a row (not counting a last round forfeit by Panno of Argentina). His showiest victory was the following, against the Argentinian Rubinetti:

### ***Sicilian Defense***

*White:* Fischer *Black:* Rubinetti 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-Q3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, N-KB3; 5 N-QB3, P-K3; 6 B-QB4, P-QR3; 7 B-N3, P-QN4; 8 O-O, B-N2; 9 R-K1, QN-Q2; 10 B-N5, P-R3; 11 B-R4, N-B4?; 12 B-Q5!, PxB; 13 PxPch, K-Q2; 14 P-QN4, N-R5; 15 NxN, PxN; 16 P-QB4, K-B1; 17 QxP, Q-Q2; 18 Q-N3, P-N4; 19 B-N3, N-R4; 20 P-B5!, PxP; 21 PxP, QxP; 22 R-K8ch, K-Q2; 23 Q-R4ch, B-B3; 24 NxB, Resigns

Tied for second with 15-8 were Larsen, Geller, and a twenty-two-year-old unknown from West Germany, Robert Hubner, and tied for the last two qualifying places, Soviet grandmaster Mark Taimanov and East German Wolfgang Uhlmann. These seven were joined by Petrosian, and the first-round pairings drawn: Petrosian vs. Hubner, Larsen vs. Uhlmann, Korchnoi vs. Geller, and Fischer vs. Taimanov.

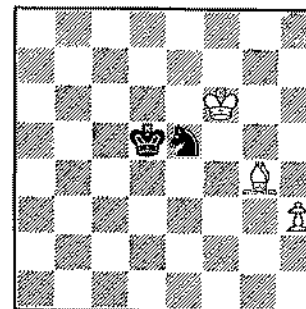
The Petrosian-Hubner match was held in Seville, Spain, and attracted a good deal of attention. No one knew much about Hubner, whose performance at the Interzonal had come as a complete surprise to everyone—he had never achieved anything of note in international chess before. Nevertheless, he proved to be a tough customer, even for an ex-world champion, and the first six games were drawn. Then Petrosian broke through and won the seventh,

after which Hubner withdrew in protest over intolerable playing conditions, specifically too much noise from the exuberant Spanish audience. Impartial reports indicate that there was some substance to Hubner's complaint, and the matter would have attracted far more attention than it did were it not for the truly sensational news from other quarters.

Not, be it noted, from either the Canary Islands, where Larsen was beating Uhlmann by  $5\frac{1}{2}$ - $3\frac{1}{2}$ , or from Moscow, where Korchnoi was disposing of Geller by  $5\frac{1}{2}$ - $2\frac{1}{2}$ . Both winners were favorites, and both triumphs had come in more or less routine fashion. The headlines were all being made in Vancouver, British Columbia, where on May 16, 1971, the match between Fischer and Taimanov had begun.

Taimanov (b. 1926) has been one of the top Soviet players for the past twenty years, but this was his first appearance in world championship competition. No one gave him much of a chance against Fischer, but equally, no one expected what actually happened. Fischer won the first game after his opponent played weakly in the opening, and also had a big advantage in the second, but dissipated it by inaccurate play. In the following position

**TAIMANOV**



**FISCHER**

Taimanov (Black) had an easy draw by  $81 \dots K-Q3$ , so easy that Kotov, who was on the scene as a journalist, was said to have remarked that "a child could draw such an ending." Taimanov,

however, played 81 . . . K-K5?? and lost after 82 B-B8, K-B5; 83 P-R4, N-B6; 84 P-R5, N-N4; 85 B-B5, N-B6; 86 P-R6, N-N4; 87 K-N6, N-B6; 88 P-R7, N-R5ch; 89 K-B6, Resigns.

In the third game Taimanov, who had apparently not quite shaken off the effects of the second, continued his downhill slide:

**KING'S INDIAN DEFENSE**  
**White: Taimanov Black: Fischer**

1 P-Q4 N-KB3 3 N-QB3 B-N2 5 N-B3  
2 P-QB4 P-KN3 4 P-K4 P-Q3

A longtime favorite with Taimanov, who has contributed much to the theory of the King's Indian for both White and Black.

5 0-0 7 0-0 N-B3 9 B-Q2  
6 B-K2 P-K4 8 P-Q5 N-K2

A little-known move, which Taimanov had apparently analyzed for the occasion. Both 9 N-K1 and, more recently, 9 N-Q2 have been played extensively here.

9 N-K1 10 R-B1 P-KB4 11 Q-N3

In the first game Taimanov had played 11 PxP, PxP; 12 N-KN5?, but after 12 . . . P-KR3; 13 N-K6, BxN; 14 PxB, Q-B1; 15 Q-N3, P-B3; 16 B-R5, QxP was simply a pawn down without compensation.

11 P-QN3 12 PxP PxP 13 N-KN5 N-KB3

After 13 . . . P-KR3; 14 N-K6, BxN; 15 PxB, Q-B1; 16 P-B5, NPxP; 17 B-R5, K-R1; 18 B-B7 White has an excellent game.

14 P-B4 P-KR3 15 PxP

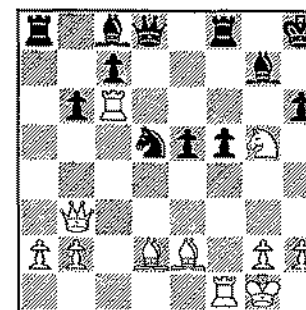
Better was 15 N-K6, BxN; 16 PxB, P-B3; 17 Q-R3! with strong pressure.

15 PxP 17 NxN NxN 19 R-B6  
16 P-B5 N/3xP 18 PxP RPxP

Preventing . . . P-B3 and so now threatening 20 B-QB4.

19 K-R1

**FISCHER**



**TAIMANOV**

20 N-B3?

Both 20 N-K6 and 20 Q-KR3 (recommended by Fischer) are much better; after the text the initiative passes to Black.

20 B-N2 21 R-N6 N-B5!

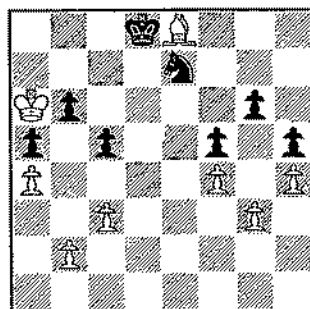
And Black has a winning advantage.

22 BxN	PxB	29 P-QN4	B-K5	36 N-N5	B-K4
23 R-Q1	Q-K2	30 R-K8	B-B3	37 P-QR3	Q-Q2
24 R-K6	Q-B4ch	31 QxB	QxQ	38 R-QR8	P-B6
25 K-B1	KR-Q1	32 RxR	Q-B3	39 PxP	BxP
26 RxRch	RxR	33 R-B8	Q-K2	40 K-N2	Q-N2ch
27 Q-R4	Q-B8ch	34 K-B1	K-R2	41 KxB	Q-K4ch
28 K-B2	B-KB1	35 N-Q4	B-N2		Resigns

Fischer won the fourth game also, with a little magic in the ending. After sixty-one moves (see diagram on page 250) Black was in *zugzwang* and could not prevent 62 BxP!, when White wins easily: 62 . . . NxB; 63 KxP, K-Q2; 64 KxBP, N-K2; 65 P-QN4, PxP; 66 PxP, N-B1; 67 P-R5, N-Q3; 68 P-N5, N-K5ch; 69 K-N6, K-B1; 70 K-B6, K-N1; 71 P-N6, Resigns.

Thoroughly punchdrunk by this time, Taimanov blundered away a draw in the fifth game, and lost the sixth very quietly to go down to defeat by an unprecedented 6-0 score. But there was a bigger surprise to come.

# TAIMANOV



# FISCHER

The pairings for the semifinals pitted Petrosian against Korchnoi and Fischer against Larsen. Petrosian-Korchnoi was weird, if quietly so: the first eight(!) games were drawn, Petrosian won the ninth, and the tenth was yet another draw, making the final score 5½-4½ in favor of the ex-world champion. A study of the decisive game shows that Korchnoi lost only because he in fact tried too hard to win:

## King's Indian Reversed

White: Petrosian Black: Korchnoi 1 P-QB4, P-K4; 2 P-KN3, P-QB3; 3 P-N3, P-Q4; 4 B-QN2, P-Q5; 5 N-KB3, B-Q3; 6 P-Q3, P-QB4; 7 B-N2, N-K2; 8 0-0, N/2-B3; 9 P-K3, 0-0; 10 QN-Q2, B-K3; 11 P-K4, N-Q2; 12 N-R4, P-KN3; 13 B-KB3, B-B2; 14 P-QR3, B-QR4; 15 B-B1, Q-K2; 16 B-N4, P-B4; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 B-B3, N-B3; 19 B-KN2, QR-Q1; 20 R-R2, B-B1; 21 R-K1, K-R1; 22 P-QN4, PxP; 23 N-N3, B-N3; 24 BxN, PxP; 25 PxP, P-QR3; 26 N-B3, P-K5; 27 P-B5, B-B2; 28 KNxP, Q-B2; 29 R-Q2, B-Q2; 30 B-N2, K-N1; 31 N-R5, BxN; 32 PxP, R-N1; 33 B-R1, KR-K1; 34 R/2-K2, Q-R4; 35 Q-Q2, K-B2; 36 P-R4, PxP; 37 QxP, P-B5; 38 N-B3, RxR; 39 QxR, QxBP; 40 N-K5ch, K-B1; 41 NxPch, NxN and Black Resigns

Most of the world's attention, however, including that of segments of the popular press that had never attended to chess before,

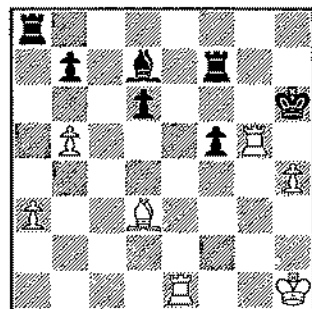
was focused on Denver, Colorado, where on July 1, 1972, Fischer sat down to play Larsen. He had already won twelve games in a row at the highest level, and all but a few expected him to beat Larsen rather easily, but the Dane, widely accepted as the second strongest player in the West, was of course a much tougher customer than Taimanov. The first game, Fischer's thirteenth straight victory, seemed to augur a hard fight ahead:

## French Defense

White: Fischer Black: Larsen 1 P-K4, P-K3 (Not one of Larsen's usual choices, but widely held to be the defense that gives Fischer the most trouble.); 2 P-Q4, P-Q4; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 P-K5, N-K2; 5 P-QR3, BxNch; 6 PxP, P-QB4; 7 P-QR4, (Fischer has never much cared for the popular 7 Q-N4, preferring to do battle on positional grounds.), QN-B3; 8 N-B3, B-Q2; 9 B-Q3, Q-B2; 10 0-0, P-B5; 11 B-K2, P-B3; 12 R-K1, N-N3 (0-0-0!); 13 B-R3!, PxP; 14 PxP, QNxP; 15 NxN, NxN; 16 Q-Q4!, N-N3 (16... N-B3; 17 B-R5ch+—); 17 B-R5!, K-B2 (17... 0-0-0; 18 QxRP, P-N3; 19 Q-R8ch, Q-N1; 20 QxQch, KxQ; 21 P-R5!, P-N4; 22 B-B5 and White has a winning advantage in the ending); 18 P-B4!, KR-K1; 19 P-B5!, PxP; 20 QxQPch, K-B3 (20... B-K3?; 21 RxP!, RxR; 22 QxPch, R-B3; 23 Q-Q5ch, R-K3; 24 R-B1ch); 21 B-B3, N-K4?; 22 Q-Q4!, K-N3; 23 RxN, QxR; 24 QxB, QR-Q1 (24... QxP?; 25 Q-Q6ch, K-N4; 26 P-R4ch, KxP; 27 Q-B4mate); 25 QxP, Q-K6ch; 26 K-B1, R-Q7; 27 Q-B6ch, R-K3; 28 B-B5!, R-B7ch (28... Q-K4; 29 B-Q4!); 29 K-N1, RxNPch; 30 KxR, Q-Q7ch; 31 K-R1, RxQ; 32 BxR, QxP/6; 33 R-N1ch, K-B3; 34 BxP, P-N4; 35 B-N6, QxP; 36 P-R5, Q-N7; 37 B-Q8ch, K-K3; 38 P-R6, Q-R6; 39 B-N7, Q-B4; 40 R-N1, P-B6; 41 B-N6, Resigns

In the second game, Larsen secured a big advantage out of the opening, but could make no headway against Fischer's stubborn defense. Whatever edge he may once have had was all but gone when, in the following position he blundered with 37 B-B4?

# FISCHER



# LARSEN

Fischer replied with the pretty move 37 . . . R-R5! and after 38 R-QB1?, BxP!; 39 BxB, RxPch; 40 K-N2, KxR the tables were turned and Larsen resigned shortly.

After this, Larsen's will to resist disappeared. He lost the third game, and the fourth, and the fifth. By this time the doings in Denver were front-page news. Larsen could have forced a draw by perpetual check in the sixth game, rightly rejected it as pointless, went on to try for a win, and lost. Fischer had won his second straight Candidates' match by a clean score.

Now there was only one obstacle remaining between Bobby and his long-cherished dream—Tigran Petrosian. After the Larsen match, people who had never heard of chess before knew, thanks to Bobby's wide exposure in the mass media, that the U.S. might have its first world chess champion in over a hundred years (*ever*, a pettifogging historian might say), and America waited expectantly for Fischer to brush aside Petrosian in spectacular fashion as well. The match began September 30, 1971, at Buenos Aires, and the first game suggested he might do just that:

## Sicilian Defense

White: Fischer Black: Petrosian 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-K3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, N-QB3; 5 N-N5, P-Q3; 6 B-KB4, P-K4; 7

B-K3, N-B3; 8 B-N5, B-K3 (In the second game of his match against Fischer, Taimanov had tried here 8 . . . Q-R4ch; 9 Q-Q2, NxP; 10 QxQ, NxQ; 11 B-K3 with strong pressure for the pawn.); 9 QN-B3, P-QR3; 10 BxN, PxP; 11 N-R3, P-Q4! (An improvement on 11 . . . N-Q5, as played by Taimanov in this sixth match game, which continued 12 N-B4, P-B4; 13 PxP, NxKBP; 14 B-Q3, R-B1; 15 BxN, RxN; 16 BxB, PxP; 17 Q-K2 with advantage to White.); 12 PxP (12 NxP, KBxN; 13 PxP, P-B4; 14 P-QB4, PxP), 12 KBxN; 13 NPxB, Q-R4; 14 Q-Q2, 0-0-0; 15 B-B4, KR-N1; 16 R-Q1? (16 B-Q3!, BxP; 17 NxB, RxN; 18 QxQ, RxQ; 19 0-0!, RxP; 20 P-KB4!±.), B-B4? (RxNP!); 17 B-Q3, BxB? (P-K5!); 18 QxB, N-Q5; 19 0-0, K-N1; 20 K-R1, QxRP; 21 P-B4, R-QB1; 22 N-K4, QxQ? (22 . . . QxP!; 23 NxP, KRxP! with an unclear position.); 23 PxQ, R-B7; 24 R-Q2, RxR; 25 NxR, P-B4!; 26 PxP, R-K1; 27 R-K1, N-B7; 28 R-K2, N-Q5; 29 R-K3, N-B7; 30 R-R3, RxP; 31 N-B3, RxP; 32 RxP, RxP; 33 P-KR4, N-K6; 34 RxP, R-Q8ch; 35 K-R2, R-QR8; 36 P-R5 (36 K-N3, RxP; 37 P-R5, RxPch; 38 K-B4, N-N5; 39 RxP, N-R3; 40 R-B6, N-N1=), P-B5? (The losing move: Black can draw with 36 . . . RxP! White's most dangerous line is then 37 R-N7, P-B5; 38 P-R6, R-R4; 39 P-R7, R-R4ch; 40 K-N1, K-R2; 41, N-N5, P-R4; 42 R-N8, P-R5; 43 P-R8(Q), RxQ; 44 RxR, P-R6; 45 R-QB8, P-R7; 46 R-B1, N-B7 and draws—analysis by Fine.); 37 RxP, RxP; 38 R-K4!, NxP; 39 K-N3, R-R4; 40 N-K5, Resigns

After that it looked as if Fischer could indeed get away with anything. In the second game of the match, however, the bubble burst:

## Grunfeld Defense

White: Petrosian Black: Fischer 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-KN3; 3 N-QB3, P-Q4; 4 B-B4, B-N2; 5 P-K3, P-B4; 6 QPxP, Q-R4; 7 R-B1, N-K5; 8 PxP, NxN; 9 Q-Q2, QxRP; 10 PxN, Q-R4; 11 B-B4, N-Q2; 12 N-K2, N-K4 (12 . . . 0-0!; 13 0-0, QxP/4; 14 B-R2, P-QN4!±); 13 B-R2, B-B4? (After this Black is positionally lost. With 13 . . . QxP/4 he could have had a perfectly playable

game.); 14 BxN, BxB; 15 N-Q4, QxP/4; 16 NxB, PxN; 17 0-0, Q-R4; 18 Q-B2, P-B5; 19 P-B4, PxP; 20 P-B5!, Q-Q7; 21 Q-R4ch, K-B1; 22 QR-Q1, Q-K7; 23 P-Q6!, Q-R4; 24 P-B4!, P-K7; 25 PxP, PxR/Q; 26 RxQ, QxP; 27 R-KB1, P-B3; 28 Q-N3, K-N2; 29 Q-B7ch, K-R3; 30 PxP, P-B4; 31 RxP, Q-Q5ch; 32 K-R1, Resigns

It was reported by those on the scene that Bobby was suffering from a heavy cold. Certainly his play in the next three games, all of which were drawn, was somewhat lackluster, as it was in the sixth, but by then the gods were smiling on Bobby again, and Petrosian made some weak moves in a complicated position, enough for Bobby to take the lead again, never to relinquish it. By the seventh game, Fischer was back in form:

#### SICILIAN DEFENSE

White: Fischer Black: Petrosian

1 P-K4	P-QB4	4 NxP	P-QR3	7 0-0	P-Q4
2 N-KB3	P-K3	5 B-Q3	N-QB3	8 P-QB4	
3 P-Q4	PxP	6 NxN	NPxP		

Spassky, in the first game of his 1969 match against Petrosian, had played 8 N-Q2 here, but got nothing out of it. Fischer's move is better.

8	N-B3	10 PxP	PxP	12 Q-R4ch!	Q-Q2
9 BPxP	KPxP	11 N-B3	B-K2		

This sacrifice of the exchange offers better chances than the passive 12... B-Q2; 13 Q-Q4, B-K3; 14 B-KB4, 0-0; 15 KR-K1 when White has a big advantage—one of the instances when the isolated queen's pawn is a clear liability.

13 R-K1

Safer than accepting Black's offer by 13 B-QN5, PxP; 14 QxR, 0-0; 15 Q-R5, P-Q5; 16 NxP, B-N2; 17 Q-B7, Q-Q4; 18 P-B3 etc., which also seems to favor White.

13	QxQ	15 B-K3	0-0
14 NxQ	B-K3	16 B-QB5!	

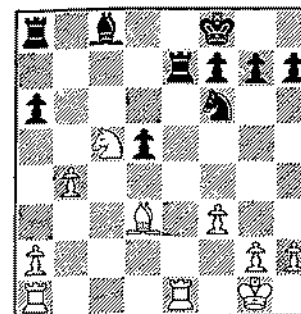
Securing a strong bind on the dark squares.

16	KR-K1	17 BxB	RxB	18 P-QN4!
----	-------	--------	-----	-----------

Preventing 18... P-QR4.

18	K-B1	19 N-B5	B-B1	20 P-B3
----	------	---------	------	---------

PETROSIAN



FISCHER

20	R/2-R2
----	--------

After 20... N-Q2; 21 RxR, KxR; 22 R-K1ch, K-Q3; 23 N-N3 etc. White wins easily.

21 R-K5!	B-Q2	23 R-QB1	R-Q3
22 NxRch!	RxN	24 R-B7	N-Q2

On 24... R-K1, 25 RxRch, NxR; 26 R-R7 wins a pawn.

25 R-K2	P-N3	27 P-B4	P-R5
26 K-B2	P-KR4	28 K-B3	

With the threat of 29 K-N4.

28	P-B4	29 K-K3!	P-Q5ch
----	------	----------	--------

Somewhat better, though hardly adequate, was 29... N-B3; 30 K-Q4, N-K5; 31 R/2-QB2.

30 K-Q2	N-N3	32 R-B7ch	K-K1	34 B-B4!	Resigns
31 R/2-K7	N-Q4	33 R/QB7-N7	NxBP		

Bobby won games eight and nine without much difficulty and so emerged the winner by 6½-2½.

# IO

## The Spassky-Fischer Match

ANYONE even remotely acquainted with the personalities and circumstances of the protagonists might have guessed that the world championship match between Boris Spassky and Bobby Fischer would prove extraordinary, but not even the most knowledgeable prognosticators anticipated much of what actually happened. Journalists, with uncharacteristic restraint, began by calling the forthcoming battle the "Match of the Century," but long before play began it became obvious that the whole history of chess afforded scant precedent for any of it. Very soon it looked as though "Scandal of the Century," although perhaps open to the same objection, might be a more appropriate title.

Although Fischer lingered in Argentina for several weeks after the end of the Petrosian match, devouring huge steaks and kibbitzing play at some local tournaments, negotiations for the big show commenced almost immediately. The first steps were entirely under the control of *FIDE*, which was accepting bids from each of the many countries anxious to play the host. According to the rules, the federation of the challenger's home country had the right to stage the first twelve games of the match, and that of the champion's, the second twelve. Alternative arrangements were of course subject to the concurrence of both parties.

By January 1, 1972 the following (incredible) bids had been submitted to *FIDE*:

Colombia	\$40,000
France	\$50,000 plus 5% of income from a variety of sources.
Greece	\$52,000
Switzerland	\$60,000
Zagreb, Yugoslavia	\$70,000
Canada	\$75,000
The Netherlands	\$80,000
Brazil	\$80,000
West Germany	\$92,000
Bled, Yugoslavia	\$100,000
Chicago	\$100,000
Sarajevo, Yugoslavia	\$120,000
Iceland	\$125,000
Argentina	\$150,000
Belgrade, Yugoslavia	\$152,000

In addition there was a late bid of \$100,000 from Brooklyn, the sleepy little village where Bobby had grown up and, incidentally, the only site in the United States unacceptable to him. Even without that, however, there were ample offers to choose from. Although, due to the secrecy in which negotiations for previous matches were sometimes conducted, it is impossible to tell the exact size of the largest purse ever offered before, the best guess is \$20,000, the sum that brought Lasker and Capablanca together in 1921. Spassky, when he defeated Petrosian in 1969, received the princely reward of \$1,400, a figure that lends support to his oft-repeated contention that he had thus far made virtually nothing out of being world champion. Fischer, for his part, was noncommittal; the bids, he remarked, were "not bad," and then added in a tone of resignation that sounded the keynote for what followed, that "they'll have to do."

The Russians, of course, apart from Spassky, were interested less in the size of the purse than in finding a playing site that would favor their man. With that in mind they quickly focused on Reykjavik, Iceland, with a climate much like that of the champion's native Leningrad. Fischer emphasized—rather overemphasized, some thought—that he cared for little else but the size of the purse,



and for that reason favored Belgrade. Actually his partiality to Yugoslavia was of at least ten years' standing (since the Bled tournament of 1961 when he had done so well); he had come to speak the language a little and was very popular there.

On February 14, *FIDE* President Dr. Max Euwe announced the following Solomonlike solution: the first twelve games of the match would be played in Belgrade, the remainder in Reykjavik; the purse would be \$138,500—a figure midway between the two bids—with five-eighths for the winner and three-eighths for the loser.

As with most compromise proposals, there were aspects of this one to which everyone could take exception. In the hopes that the details could be worked out satisfactorily Colonel Edmondson of the U.S. Chess Federation, in his capacity as Fischer's semi-official representative, flew to Europe and attended a series of arduous negotiations in Amsterdam and Moscow. Finally, on March 20, Dr. Euwe's scheme was agreed upon, and the match scheduled to begin in Belgrade on June 22.

This *entente cordiale* among the negotiators was rudely shattered, however, when Fischer dispatched identical telegrams to the organizers in Belgrade and Reykjavik demanding, in addition to his share of the purse, a percentage both of the gate receipts and of the television and film rights. He also indicated that henceforth he would do his own negotiating. Dr. Euwe responded that the financial arrangements were already agreed upon, and that unless Fischer guaranteed to live up to them, he would be disqualified as the challenger to the world champion. He gave Fischer until midnight of April 4 to reply.

Sometime after 11 P.M. on April 4, Fischer's cablegram arrived at *FIDE* headquarters in Amsterdam: ambiguously worded, it expressed his willingness to play on terms set forth by *FIDE*, but whether or not those terms were to include the financial arrangements as well was an open question. Needless to say open questions about money do not sit well with show-biz entrepreneurs, no matter what the nature of the show, and the Belgrade organizers demanded in their turn that the U.S. Chess Federation post the sum of \$35,000 to guarantee the challenger's appearance.

Now even if the U.S. Chess Federation happened to have had \$35,000 lying about the office, they might have dreamed up better

things to do with it than to stake it all on the off chance that Bobby Fischer would be anywhere at any given time. Quite naturally they replied that the Yugoslav demand was illegal, at which the Belgrade organizers withdrew altogether, leaving *FIDE* holding the bag (or was it half the bag?).

Obviously there could not be a second half of a match without a first. Dr. Euwe promptly set about in search of a new site, a quest that must have reminded him of his predecessor's frantic efforts to find a home for the 1962 Interzonal (see page 200). Time was short—the match could begin no later than the first week of July if it was to end before the start of the forthcoming Chess Olympiad, scheduled for September 18. However contrived the reason might appear for *FIDE*'s undignified haste, the sense of urgency generated by the quick succession of failures that followed—tentative plans to hold the first twelve games in Paris, Puerto Rico and Australia all fell through—was almost universal. Finally the organizers in Iceland expressed their willingness to take responsibility for the whole of the match, in effect submitting again their original bid of \$125,000. Dr. Euwe gave Fischer until May 6 to either accept the new arrangements, or to find himself replaced by the now almost-forgotten Petrosian.

On May 5, Fischer accepted—under protest. Speaking through his lawyers, he accused *FIDE* of bias against him and the Russians of “continued attempts . . . to defend a title by chicanery instead of skill.” The statement went on to say that, although he admired the people and the country of Iceland, he feared that “the lack of technical facilities there made televised coverage very difficult and severely hampered films or tape recordings of the event.” He was, he said, concerned to make sure that the American people “could for the first time see their representative play for the world championship.” The irony of those words in the light of subsequent events has been duly noted.

The schedule now called for the opening ceremonies to be held on Saturday, July 1, with play to begin on the following day. Spassky and his entourage, consisting of grandmasters Efim Geller and Nikolai Krogus and international master Ivo Nei, among others, arrived in Iceland on June 21, and the world champion, quickly adjusting to the new time zone and the 24-hour daylight

of the near-Arctic summer, settled into a routine of tennis, jogging and study while awaiting further developments.

Fischer, meanwhile, had all but disappeared. The world's news media were by this time attending to chess in earnest, and the game was receiving newspaper, radio and television coverage as never before; most of that attention quite naturally focused on Bobby. Fischer, who had been the target of adverse publicity since he was about twelve, had acquired a distrust of reporters and cameramen that one associates more with a movie star than a chess player; hence his retreat into seclusion. The only communication from him, forwarded through his lawyers, was a demand that 30 percent of the gate receipts be added to the prize fund.

On June 25, Fischer cancelled a reservation on a flight from New York to Reykjavik. No explanation was forthcoming, but newsmen were assured, both by Paul Marshall, one of his lawyers, and by Edmondson, that Bobby would indeed show up in Iceland in time for the first game. On June 29, Fischer was actually spotted in a restaurant at Kennedy Airport, ostensibly awaiting a flight to Reykjavik; when he in turn spotted the crowd of reporters and photographers, he bolted, eluded his pursuers, and once more disappeared.

On July 1—the day scheduled for the opening ceremonies—another of Fischer's lawyers, Andrew Davis, requested a two-day postponement on behalf of his still-absent client. With one eye on the Russians, who thus far had maintained a rather chilling official silence, Dr. Euwe granted the two days' respite, adding that if Fischer failed to appear in Reykjavik by noon on Tuesday, July 4, he would forfeit the match.

The stage was now set for the ascent, through a well-concealed trap, of a *diabolus ex machina*. This one, in appropriately modern guise, called himself James D. Slater, chairman of the board of Slater Walker Securities, a holding company of varied interests, and he brought with him a personal fortune estimated to be in excess of \$6 million. His method of intervention was simplicity itself: he offered to add \$125,000 to the prize fund. "The money is mine," Slater said. "I like chess and have played it for years. Many want to see this match, and everything has been arranged. If Fischer does not go to Iceland, many will be disappointed."

And a spokesman added: "This puts Fischer behind the eight ball. He will have to come out and play or show he is chicken."

Fischer came out to play. With a touch of drama that would have done credit to Ian Fleming, he was finally smuggled aboard an Icelandic Airlines jet and, late in the evening of Monday, July 3, took off from New York for Reykjavik. He landed in Iceland shortly before 7 A.M. on the following day, a little more than ten hours before the rescheduled start of the first game.

But meanwhile the Soviets had broken their long silence to lodge a "strong protest" against the postponement, and to assert their opinion that Fischer's conduct warranted his "unconditional disqualification." Bobby subsequently failed to appear at the drawing to determine who would play White in the first game, sending instead a representative described in a Tass bulletin as "an American wearing a clergyman's habit" (later identified as the Reverend William Lombardy, who had arrived to act as Fischer's second). Spassky himself then issued a statement that in the rather clumsy official translation read as follows:

Fischer broke the rules of holding the contest by refusing to come for the ceremony of opening the match. By this Fischer insulted me, personally, and the Chess Federation of the USSR, which I represent.

The public opinion in the USSR and I, personally, are indignant over Fischer's conduct. Under all human notions, he discredited himself completely. By this he jeopardized his moral right to play in the match for the world crown.

Fischer must bear the just punishment before there is a hope of holding the match. Only after this can I return to the question about the possibility of holding the match.

Although the language was awkward and the message vague in some details (there was no indication, for example, what might constitute "just punishment"), its thrust was clear: the Russians were threatening to pull out, and to take the title back home with them. A day of frenzied negotiations followed, climaxed by a statement of apology from Fischer to Spassky that was promptly rejected largely because it was unsigned.

It was only after Fischer himself delivered a handwritten apology

to Spassky, in which he attributed his "disrespectful behavior in not attending the opening ceremony" to his "petty dispute over money with the Icelandic chess organizers" that the atmosphere cleared somewhat. In the following paragraph he also apologized to

. . . Dr. Max Euwe, president of *FIDE*, to the match organizers in Iceland, to the thousands of chess fans around the world and especially to the millions of fans and the many friends I have in the United States.

With that, Bobby's supply of contrition was apparently exhausted. He went on to point out that were the Russian Chess Federation acceded to in its demand that the first game be forfeited to Spassky, it would place the challenger in an untenable position. He appealed to Spassky's sense of sportsmanship, concluding "I don't believe that the world champion desires such an advantage in order to play me."

This note was acceptable to the Russians, and the demand for a forfeiture in the first game was quietly dropped. On the next day (July 8) the draw was finally held (Spassky secured the white pieces in the opening game) and the starting date was set for Tuesday, July 11.

This is not to say, however, that all the problems were solved—far from it. Behind the scenes bickering continued over several matters, the most irksome of which concerned television and film rights. The Icelandic organizers had sold exclusive rights to film the proceedings to an American firm headed by one Chester Fox, and as part of the agreement were attempting to limit other forms of coverage. Newspaper journalists particularly were put out by what they deemed to be censorship; Bobby wholeheartedly agreed with them, with consequences that would become apparent somewhat later.

All this was temporarily submerged, however, in the Icelanders' obvious delight that their extensive preparations were at last going to amount to something. The 2,300-seat Exhibition Hall was ready—on stage, under the newly installed fluorescent lighting, stood the 300-pound mahogany chess table built especially for the occasion; upon it on a board fashioned of grey Italian marble and green slate

treated with acid to cut down on glare, stood a hand-carved set that had been flown in from England. Even Fischer's chair was special, a chrome and leather swivel job fetched from New York, identical to the one he had sat in in Buenos Aires when he had defeated Petrosian. Later Spassky demanded—and got—a chair just like it. Virtually every detail of that setting had been the subject of exhaustive wrangling, as had other matters such as the temperature of the room and the distance between the players and the front row of the audience—40 feet, at Fischer's insistence. (At several times during the match Bobby was to demand that this distance be further increased by the removal of the first seven rows of seats.) No item had been overlooked, no matter how trivial, by means of which one side might harass the other.

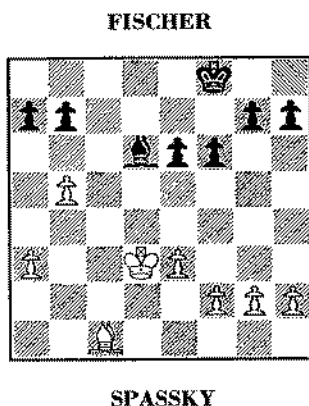
Another potential source of trouble was the clumsy placement of the television cameras. They were rigged somewhat precariously on scaffolding just off the stage, and members of the American delegation were certain that their rather awkward movements would prove a distraction to Fischer. They were also certain that, once he objected to the cameras, no amount of modification in the arrangements would placate him; they would simply have to go. The organizers, however, chose to ignore the warning, hoping to make changes only as called for by the players themselves.

With all the speculation about whether the match was actually going to take place, there was understandably little discussion of the equally interesting question of who was going to win. On the strength of his showing in their five previous encounters (the first dating back to 1960) of which he had won three and drawn two, Spassky ought to have been the favorite. But in fact it was Fischer who was heavily favored. His spectacular showings in the Candidates' matches, dazzling when compared with Spassky's lackluster results over the same period, were dominant in the minds of most observers. There was also a feeling shared by many people all over the world, impossible to justify rationally but no less real for that, that Bobby Fischer had been destined by the gods to become world chess champion, and that what had gone before in the history of the game was a kind of elaborate prelude to his coronation.

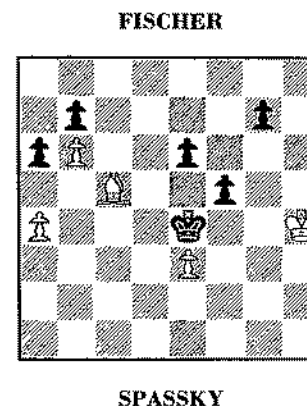
There was still one small obstacle remaining to be overcome,

however, and promptly at 5 P.M. on the evening of July 11 he made his appearance on the stage of the Reykjavik Exhibition Hall wearing a dark three-piece suit. He paused briefly to chat with the referee, grandmaster Lothar Schmid of West Germany, then sat down to make his first move—1 P-Q4—pressed Fischer's clock, and waited. Seven minutes later Fischer arrived, nattily attired as always, scanned the board for a few seconds and replied 1 . . . N-KB3.

After the tumult that had attended every step of the preparations, the game itself soon began to look as if it would prove a decided anticlimax. The opening was a Nimzo-Indian Defense and Spassky, making very little attempt to preserve his initiative, found himself after fourteen moves with no more than equality in a rather lifeless middlegame. Bobby, too, seemed content simply to swap off pieces, and in the following position, after White's 29th move, it would have appeared eminently plausible had the players agreed to split the point:



Then the incredible happened: Fischer, moving quickly, played 29 . . . BxKRP?, losing a piece. Play continued 30 P-N3, P-KR4; 31 K-K2, P-R5; 32 K-B3, and probably only here did Bobby realize that after 32 . . . P-R6; 33 K-N4, B-N8; 34 KxP, BxP White would have had 35 B-Q2, trapping his bishop. After 32 . . . K-K2, however, Black still retained sufficient counterplay to save the game; it was only when, in the following position



Fischer blundered again with 40 . . . P-B5? (40 . . . K-Q4! would have drawn) that his position was beyond hope.

Interest in the match was such that a huge crowd gathered on the following day to watch Spassky solve the not-very-difficult technical problems en route to a one point lead. Those who had come to see the players rather than the play were amply rewarded by one of the strangest spectacles ever in world championship competition: after making his 43rd move, Fischer walked off the stage, protesting that the presence of the television crews working in the wings distracted him. He remained away from the board for 35 minutes, with his clock running most of that time, until officials of the Icelandic Federation gave orders to dismantle the cameras. Fischer then returned, struggled on till the 56th move, and resigned.

A formal protest from the American side naturally followed Fischer's impromptu performance: a note to referee Schmid demanded that all cameras—private ones in the audience as well as the TV equipment—be barred from the auditorium. Schmid replied that problems about filming were not in his jurisdiction and also cited article 21 in the contract signed by Colonel Edmondson as Fischer's representative (Bobby almost never signs anything himself). This article assumes such importance in what follows that it is worth quoting in full:

21 All taking of still photographs and any disturbance of the players during play is forbidden without the express permission of both players. The only filming, videotaping or

television allowed will be that which is exclusively and officially arranged by the organizers. Therefore, unless prior permission has been given by both players, no cameras will be allowed in the playing room except those required for the official uses described in the preceding sentence. The organizers guarantee that these official cameras will be neither visible nor audible to the players and they will not be disturbed in any way, such as by flash, extra lights, or extra personnel in the playing area.

Thus in subsequent litigation the organizers (that is to say Chester Fox, who holds the contract for the film rights) can cite the second sentence of this charming clause and Fischer can cite the last, with obscure consequences the nature of which mere chess players may scarcely conjecture.

At this point, however, Fischer was simply not interested in legal niceties: he just declared (through his lawyers, of course) that he would not play until the TV cameras were removed, and no amount of cajoling or remonstrance would budge him.

The next day at 5 P.M. Boris Spassky appeared on the stage of the Exhibition Hall, watched impassively as referee Schmid started Fischer's clock, and disappeared shortly thereafter. The hushed audience focused its collective attention on a television screen where they could watch the minutes ticking away on Fischer's clock, while Icelandic officials rushed about frantically trying to find some solution that would satisfy everybody and permit the match to go on. After 35 minutes had elapsed, Fox announced his willingness to forgo filming temporarily, and word of this development was relayed to Fischer at his hotel. Bobby in turn replied he would play provided that his clock were turned back 35 minutes to the scheduled starting time. This referee Schmid flatly refused to allow.

After the full hour had passed, Schmid made his way to the front of the stage and announced that under Article 5 of the contract ("If a player is more than one hour late for the start of a game, he loses that game by forfeit.") Spassky was the winner of the second game. The champion made a brief appearance back on stage, acknowledged a standing ovation, and then rushed out of

the hall. It is reported that on his way to the door he encountered an American grandmaster to whom he remarked (his usually excellent English fractured in the emotion of the moment), "It is a very pity."

"It is a very pity." For long, agonizing hours it looked as if that poignant utterance might fittingly serve as an epitaph for the "Match of the Century." The Icelandic Chess Federation maintained that revenue from the filming was absolutely necessary to meet the costs they had incurred, and claimed that every effort had been made to assure that the cameras were indeed "neither visible nor audible to the players" as stipulated in the contract. Technicians had belatedly placed each camera in a tunnel adjacent to the stage, with four-inch holes bored in the walls to accommodate the lenses. Only one operator was permitted to each camera, and he was prohibited from wearing shoes or carrying anything in his pockets that might rattle or make noise. Close inspection indicated that, from the players' table at any rate, the cameras were now indeed invisible and inaudible; an investigator from the Reykjavik Institute of Public Health tested the sound level in various parts of the hall and found it the same (about 55 decibels) whether the cameras were running or not. It was clear at this point that the *idea* that the match was being filmed against his will was what was troubling Bobby; he remained adamant. A few people discovered a little black humor in the situation when they recalled that Fischer's original objection to holding the match in Iceland was that "the lack of technical facilities there made television coverage very difficult and severely hampered films or tape recordings of the event," but for some reason, nobody laughed.

On the following day Fischer delivered another formal protest to Schmid and the Tournament Committee. Fred Cramer of the USCF, representing Fischer, Krogus, representing Spassky, and two Icelanders inspected the hall yet again and, declaring that "the playing conditions in every respect conformed to the match rules," upheld the forfeit. Fischer promptly made reservations on every available flight back to New York.

In the morning and early afternoon of Sunday, July 16, anyone willing to bet that the third game would come off on schedule might have found long odds awaiting him on any street corner in

downtown Reykjavik. But suddenly a light shone through the darkness: at about 3 P.M. Bill Lombardy telephoned to Schmid and relayed to him Fischer's proposal that the game be played in a private room behind the stage. Schmid in turn communicated with Spassky, who promptly agreed.

Thus it was that the relatively small audience of optimists who came to the Exhibition Hall in hope of a miracle witnessed one of the technological variety: a huge TV screen on which a closed-circuit transmission—Fischer had never objected to closed-circuit television—kept them in touch with doings in the inner sanctum. There were some anxious moments: Fischer was ten minutes late, there was a further delay of eight minutes while Bobby delivered himself of some further thoughts on divers subjects, and then a final pause of five minutes while the challenger pondered his first move. The game was also interesting:

### **Modern Benoni**

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Fischer 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-KB3, P-B4; 4 P-Q5, PxP; 5 PxP, P-Q3; 6 N-B3, P-KN3; 7 N-Q2, QN-Q2; 8 P-K4, B-N2; 9 B-K2, 0-0; 10 0-0, R-K1; 11 Q-B2, N-R4!; 12 BxN, PxB; 13 N-B4, N-K4; 14 N-K3, Q-R5!; 15 B-Q2, N-N5; 16 NxN, PxN; 17 B-B4, Q-B3!; 18 P-KN3, B-Q2; 19 P-QR4, P-N3!; 20 KR-K1, P-QR3; 21 R-K2, P-N4; 22 QR-K1, Q-N3; 23 P-N3, R-K2; 24 Q-Q3, R-N1; 25 PxP, PxP; 26 P-N4, P-B5; 27 Q-Q2, R/1-K1; 28 R-K3, P-R4; 29 R/3-K2, K-R2; 30 R-K3, K-N1; 31 R/3-K2, BxN; 32 QxB, RxP; 33 RxR, RxR; 34 RxR, QxR; 35 B-R6, Q-N3; 36 B-B1, Q-N8; 37 K-B1, B-B4; 38 K-K2, Q-K5ch; 39 Q-K3, Q-B7ch; 40 Q-Q2? (40 K-K1!), Q-N6; 41 Q-Q4?

In this position the game was adjourned. On the following day Fischer arrived late (as usual) for the play-off, only to discover that Spassky, on learning that the sealed move was 41 . . . B-Q6ch!, had already resigned.

Long before the game was over, speculation had begun about Bobby's sudden change of heart: why had he made the last minute

suggestion about the private room, consenting to play even with the second game forfeit still on the scoreboard? (Later threats by Fischer's lawyers to sue if the committee's decision was not reversed came to nothing.) Was it that he suddenly realized that he could beat Spassky, despite the two point deficit? Was it that he simply could not bear to see his life's ambition go down the drain without a fight, no matter what the odds? Only later was it revealed that he had had a phone call from Henry Kissinger, foreign-affairs adviser to President Nixon, pleading with him to continue the match. Kissinger, who had made the revelation at a press conference, said that the president did not himself suggest the call, but was delighted when he was told of it.

Before Spassky had left the playing room after resigning the third game, he had notified Schmid in no uncertain terms that he would not play in the back room again. With no little trepidation the organizers announced that the fourth game would take place in the main hall, obviously without the slightest notion what they would do if Fischer refused to play there. But the challenger made no protest. The game was played on schedule and resulted in the first draw of the match; Spassky, with the Black pieces, seized the initiative very quickly and secured a big advantage, but failed to bring it home. The score thus stood at 2½-1½ in favor of the champion.

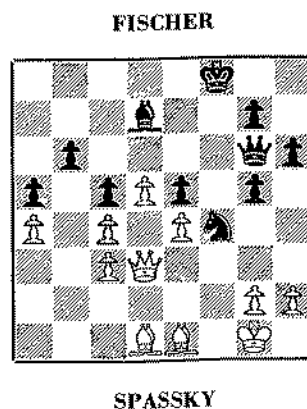
When the fifth game began on schedule in the main hall, it seemed to everyone that the worst was over—and for once everyone was right. Attention now focused on what William Caxton long ago called "The Game and Playe of the Chesse," and the question of who was going to win once more became the principal subject under discussion in the chess world. The fifth game broke into that discussion like a kind of bombshell:

### **Nimzo-Indian Defense**

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Fischer 1 P-Q4, N-KB3; 2 P-QB4, P-K3; 3 N-QB3, B-N5; 4 N-B3, P-B4; 5 P-K3, N-B3; 6 B-Q3, BxNch; 7 PxN, P-Q3 (A system popularized by the young West German Robert Hubner.); 8 P-K4, P-K4; 9 P-Q5, N-K2; 10 N-R4, P-KR3;



11 P-B4!? (An innovation. But what did Fischer have in mind against the old move 11 P-B3?: after 11 P-B3, P-KN4; 12 N-B5, BxN; 13 PxP; Q-R4; 14 Q-B2!, as in Donner-Damjanovich, Cienfuegos, 1972, White has a big edge.), N-N3! (Not 11 . . . PxP; 12 BxP, P-KN4; 13 P-K5!, N-N5; 14 P-K6, N-KB3; 15 B-N3±); 12 NxN, PxN; 13 PxP, PxP±; 14 B-K3, P-N3; 15 O-O, O-O; 16 P-QR4, P-QR4!; 17 R-N1, B-Q2; 18 R-N2, R-N1; 19 R/2-KB2? (19 Q-R1!?), Q-K2; 20 B-B2, P-KN4; 21 B-Q2, Q-K1; 22 B-K1, Q-N3; 23 Q-Q3, N-R4!; 24 RxRch, RxR; 25 RxRch, KxR; 26 B-Q1, N-B5;



27 Q-B2?? (This is a blunder that loses immediately; the question remains whether after 27 Q-N1 White can hold the game: Black would have continued with the maneuver K-K2-Q1-B2 and then attacked on the king-side with . . . P-R4-5, . . . Q-R3 and . . . P-N5, and there would have been little White could have done about it.), BxP!; Resigns (After 28 QxB, QxP wins, and after 28 Q-N1, BxB; 29 QxB, QxP is decisive.)

So Bobby had blundered away one point, surrendered another by forfeit, and had now tied the match after five games! The play in the fifth game clearly indicated that all was not well with Spassky—was it that all the fuss in the preceding days had had much more of an adverse effect on him than it had on his seemingly more temperamental opponent? Or was it simply that Fischer was

again playing the irresistible superchess that had enabled him to sweep all before him in the Candidates'? The sixth game provided evidence in support of both hypotheses:

**QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED**  
**White: Fischer Black: Spassky**  
 1 P-QB4

Fischer's choice of openings for this match, apart from the actual labor of preparatory analysis, was itself superb, and in good measure responsible for his overwhelming victory. Time and again he found ways to steer the games in directions that Spassky could not reasonably have anticipated by his study of Fischer's praxis, and both the practical and psychological advantages that accrued to the challenger were enormous. For Spassky, who may be said to have had the entire chessic manpower of the Soviet Union to aid him in his preparations, to find himself thus manipulated, must have been one of the most disheartening aspects of the whole dreary business.

This is of course not to suggest that Spassky's preparations were utterly useless—he had already afforded his opponent one nasty surprise in the opening of the fourth game, and was to do so again in the eleventh (see page 275). But most of the time it was Fischer who had the surprises in store.

P-K3

Fischer had opened with 1 P-QB4 only once before this game, against Polugayevski at the Palma, 1970 Interzonal. (He had also played the move against Panno in the final round of that same tournament, but, as Panno had forfeited that game in protest over a schedule change, it was irrelevant to Spassky's problem.) Polugayevski had replied 1 . . . N-KB3, and after 2 P-KN3, P-B3; 3 B-N2, P-Q4; 4 N-KB3, B-B4; 5 Q-N3, Q-N3; 6 PxP, QxQ; 7 PxQ, PxP had a plausible position and drew in 38 moves.

2 N-KB3 P-Q4 3 P-Q4

Here is the real surprise. Fischer had never before played the Queen's Gambit in a serious game, and unless Spassky was clairvoyant he could hardly have devoted much of his pre-match worrying time to the possibility that he might do so now. But there it was, right before his eyes, and with it the question: how to defend?

3 N-KB3	5 B-N5 O-O	7 B-R4 P-QN3
4 N-B3 B-K2	6 P-K3 P-KR3	

This is Tartakover's Defense, an old favorite with Spassky, whose successes with it have done much to restore the line to a modest popularity. Prior to this game he had never lost with it.

# 8 PxP

Spassky, who has had excellent results against the seemingly more aggressive 8 Q-B2, e.g. Uhlmann-Spassky, Moscow, 1967, continued 8 . . . B-N2; 9 BxN, BxB; 10 PxP, PxP; 11 0-0-0, P-B4; 12 P-KN4, PxP; 13 PxP, N-B3; 14 P-KR4, P-N3; 15 P-N5, PxP; 16 P-R5, K-N2; 17 PxP, PxP; 18 B-N5, P-N5!; 19 Q-Q2?!, PxN; 20 Q-R6ch, K-B2; 21 Q-R7ch, B-N2; 22 R-R3, R-R1!; Resigns.

8 NxP 10 NxN PxN  
9 BxB QxB 11 R-B1

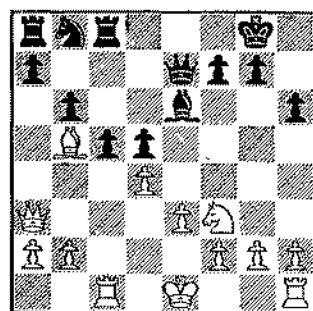
The older 11 B-K2 has been out of favor since Fischer scored a smashing victory with the Black pieces against Bertok in the Stockholm, 1962 Interzonal. That game shows Black achieving, very quickly and smoothly, all of his strategical objectives in this defense; it continued 11 . . . B-K3; 12 0-0, P-QB4; 13 PxP, PxP; 14 Q-R4, Q-N2!; 15 Q-R3, N-Q2; 16 N-K1, P-QR4; 17 N-Q3, P-R5; 18 N-B4, KR-N1; 19 QR-N1, B-B4+++, etc.

11 B-K3 12 Q-R4 P-QB4

A promising new move in this position is 12 . . . P-QR4, with the threat of 13 . . . Q-N5ch, leading to an advantageous ending. After 13 R-B3, R-B1; 14 B-Q3, P-QB4; 15 Q-R3, Q-R2! (Furman-A. Zajcev, Tallinn, 1971), Black stands better.

13 Q-R3 R-B1 14 B-N5!

## SPASSKY



## FISCHER

After 14 B-K2, N-Q2 White has no advantage. The idea behind 14 B-N5!, first played in the game Furman-Geller, USSR Team Championship, 1970 is to answer Black's eventual . . . N-Q2 with BxN, and so weaken Black's central pawn formation by depriving the soon-to-be hang-

ing pawns of the piece best able to defend them. It is Black's inability to permit this exchange that leads to his subsequent difficulties.

14 P-R3 15 PxP PxP 16 0-0 R-R2

This awkward move leads only to further concessions and ultimate chaos in the Black camp. After 16 . . . Q-N2; 17 B-K2 (17 B-R4, B-Q2!?), N-Q2 Black can still hope to coordinate his forces and perhaps even to work up some counterplay on the open queen-knight file.

17 B-K2 N-Q2

The Furman-Geller game continued 17 . . . P-QR4; 18 R-B3, N-Q2; 19 KR-B1, R-K1; 20 B-N5 with a big advantage for White. But Spassky's move is no improvement.

18 N-Q4! Q-B1(?)

This move has been widely criticized as a loss of time, and various other ways to resolve the tension (e.g. 18 . . . N-B1, 18 . . . K-B1, even 18 . . . N-B3) have been recommended in its place. But no clear-cut plan has yet been proposed by which Black can secure even modest counterplay, and the most glaring defect in his position—the weakened pawn structure—would remain in any event. The position simply favors White, it seems.

19 NxB PxN 20 P-K4!

A key thrust, presenting Black with unpalatable alternatives: after 20 . . . PxP; 21 B-B4, Q-K2; 22 KR-K1, N-B3; 23 P-B3, K-R1; 24 PxP, P-K4; 25 QR-Q1 the scattered pawns make inviting targets in the endgame.

20 P-Q5

But this move also constitutes a grievous concession, weakening the white squares and turning White's bishop into a powerhouse. Fischer now turns his attention to the center and the king-side.

21 P-B4 Q-K2 22 P-K5!

Now the pawn on Black's K3 is a fixed target.

22 R-N1 23 B-B4 K-R1

On 23 . . . N-N3, 24 Q-QN3! wins the king-pawn.

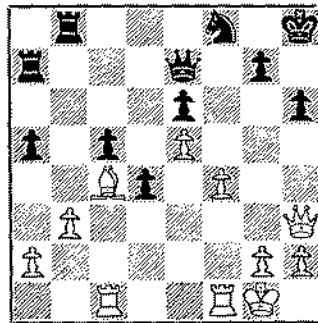
24 Q-R3 N-B1

After 24 . . . RxP; 25 BxP White's king-side pawn storm would get going even faster than in the game.

25 P-QN3 P-QR4



# SPASSKY



# FISCHER

26 P-B5! PxP 27 RxP N-R2

To answer 27 R-B7? with 27 . . . N-N4!

28 R/1-B1 Q-Q1 30 P-KR4 R/1-N2  
29 Q-N3 R-K2 31 P-K6

This push, further increasing White's advantage in space, doesn't really free Black's KB3 for his wretched knight, because the exchange sacrifice, finally played on the 38th move, is always available.

31 R/N2-B2 32 Q-K5 Q-K1 33 P-R4 Q-Q1

Black is almost in *zugzwang*; even 33 . . . K-N1 loses immediately to 34 R-B7.

34 R/1-B2 Q-K1 36 B-Q3 Q-K1  
35 R/2-B3 Q-Q1 37 Q-K4!

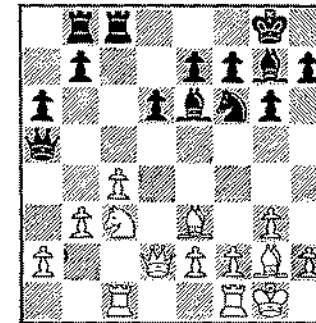
Now the threat of 38 R-B8ch compels Black to allow the exchange sac on KB3, unless of course he wants to resign immediately.

37 N-B3 39 RxP K-N1 41 Q-B4 Resigns  
38 RxN PxR 40 B-B4 K-R1

This disaster constituted the real beginning of Spassky's nightmare, although the worst of it was not to come until the eighth game. In the seventh Fischer, with the Black pieces, secured a big advantage out of the opening, but played hastily in the middle game and allowed his opponent to make a draw by some problem-like moves in the ending. If that lucky escape afforded Spassky's

well-wishers any encouragement, however, it was quickly dispelled by the champion's sequence of crass blunders beginning with his fifteenth move in the eighth game. In the following position

# SPASSKY



# FISCHER

. . . 15 R-B2; 16 KR-Q1, R/1-QB1 would have led to an even game. Instead Spassky played 15 . . . P-QN4? and after 16 B-R7, PxP? (16 . . . R-R1; 17 BxR, RxR; 18 B-Q4, PxP would have offered some chances); 17 BxR, RxR; 18 PxP, BxP; 19 KR-Q1, N-Q2?? (19 . . . K-B1); 20 N-Q5, QxQ; 21 NxPch, K-B1; 22 RxQ was the exchange down without the slightest compensation.

After this debacle, Spassky understandably took time out with a medical postponement. The ninth game was a quiet draw, the tenth, another win for Fischer, after a hard struggle. With the score 6½-3½ in his favor, Bobby must have felt that it was all over but the closing ceremony and the lawsuits, but there were in fact one or two more surprises left in the "Match of the Century." The eleventh game, for example:

# SICILIAN DEFENSE

White: Spassky Black: Fischer

1 P-K4 P-QB4 3 P-Q4 PxP 5 N-QB3 P-QR3  
2 N-KB3 P-Q3 4 NxP N-KB3

The Najdorf Sicilian is of course an old favorite with Fischer, who had already used it to good effect (at least so far as the opening was concerned) in the seventh game.

6 B-KN5 P-K3 7 P-B4 Q-N3

This move institutes the so-called "poisoned pawn" variation, a line so extensively analyzed that all but a very few specialists avoid it like the plague. Bobby, however, is not only one of the specialists, but probably knows more about it than all the others combined. That he too can go astray on occasion is an eloquent testimonial to the inexhaustibility of chess.

8 Q-Q2 QxP 9 N-N3

After the far more usual 9 R-QN1, Q-R6 White has a choice among three continuations: 1) 10 P-K5 (*the oldest, dating back to the middle 50's*), PxP; 11 PxP, N-Q2; 12 B-QB4, 2) 10 BxN (*the most solid*), PxB; 11 B-K2 or 3) 10 P-B5 (*the latest try*), N-B3; 11 PxP, PxP; 12 NxN, PxN; 13 P-K5. In each the only certain prospects are of headaches for both sides.

9 Q-R6

White was threatening 10 P-QR3 followed by 11 R-R2, trapping the queen. The move in the text is Bobby's improvement on 9 . . . N-B3; 10 R-QN1 (*now 10 P-QR3 is met by 10 . . . N-QR4*), Q-R6, which is apparently in White's favor, e.g. 11 BxN, PxB; 12 B-Q3, B-N2; 13 O-O, O-O; 14 R-B3, K-R1; 15 R-R3, N-K2; 16 P-B5, PxP; 17 PxP, BxP; 18 BxB, NxP; 19 N-Q5, with a strong attack (*Matulovich-Kavalek, Sousse Interzonal, 1967*).

10 BxN!

In the seventh game Spassky had tried 10 B-Q3, but after 10 . . . B-K2; 11 O-O, P-R3!; 12 B-R4, NxP; 13 NxN, BxB; 14 P-B5, PxP; 15 B-N5ch! (*the best chance*), PxP; 16 NxPch, K-B1; 17 NxP, N-B3! his attack had disappeared.

10 PxP 11 B-K2

Up to here it had all been done before, although in games so little known that only the most painstaking students of the openings (*like Gligorich, to whose book on the match this note is indebted*) might be expected to know them. On 11 . . . N-B3; 12 O-O both 12 . . . B-Q2 (13 K-R1, B-K2; 14 B-R5, R-KB1; 15 Q-K3, N-R4; 16 P-B5, NxN; 17 BPxN! —*Angantysson-Ogaard, Denmark, 1968*) and 12 . . . B-N2 (13 R-B3, B-Q2; 14 P-B5, R-QB1; 15 R-N3!, R-KN1; 16 R-KB1—*Minich-Buljovicich, Yugoslavia, 1966*) White has a clear advantage.

11 P-KR4

Obviously to prevent 12 B-R5.

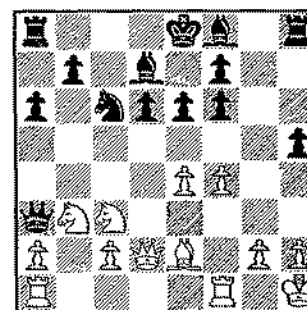
12 O-O N-B3 13 K-R1

This move is not presently necessary—perhaps Spassky had not yet hit on the idea behind N-N1???

13 B-Q2?

Black must play 13 . . . N-R4.

FISCHER



SPASSKY

14 N-N1!!

Spassky claims to have found this over the board. Of course nobody believes him, although precedents are not lacking in the history of chess—in the good old days strong players used to find new moves in the opening *in medias res* all the time, and even today there is no rule against it. But whether the move came by telephone from Moscow, or occurred to one of the Russian contingent in Reykjavik at any time after the seventh game, or Spassky's fairy godmother suggested it to him during this one, is beside the point, which is that the move itself is a killer.

14 Q-N5

Black is in dire trouble—14 . . . Q-N7? loses the queen after 15 P-QR4, 16 N-R3 and either 17 N-B4 or 17 KR-N1, and on 14 . . . Q-R5; 15 P-B4! White's grip on the center is sufficient for a big edge.

15 Q-K3 P-Q4(?)

This attempt to surrender the extra pawn is doomed to failure, but 15 . . . N-K2; 16 N/1-Q2 is not appealing either. Black is probably lost.

16 PxP N-K2 17 P-B4!

Much better than 17 PxP, PxP which would only free Black's game.

17 N-B4 18 Q-Q3! P-R5

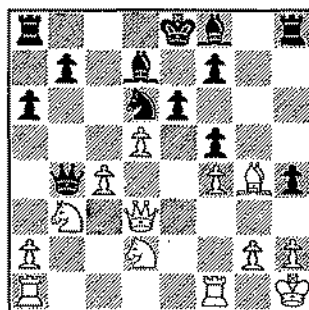
Useless, but 18 . . . PxP; 19 PxP, B-N4; 20 QxN, BxB; 21 N/1-Q2, BxR; 22 RxB is even worse. The text at least does threaten 19 . . . N-N6ch; 20 PxN, PxPch; 21 K-N1, B-B4ch.

19 B-N4

This not only parries the threat (now after 19 . . . N-N6ch; 20 PxN, PxPch White has 21 B-R3) but threatens in turn to exchange Black's only well placed piece.

19 N-Q3 20 N/1-Q2 P-B4

FISCHER



SPASSKY

21 P-QR3!

Renewing the plot to trap the badly placed Black queen, and this time there is no escape.

21 Q-N3

The only move; on 21 . . . Q-R5 White has 22 N-B5.

22 P-B5 Q-N4 23 Q-QB3!

There is now no way to meet the impending 24 P-QR4.

23 PxB 24 P-QR4 P-R6

Or 24 . . . Q-K7; 25 QR-K1. Black could safely have resigned here.

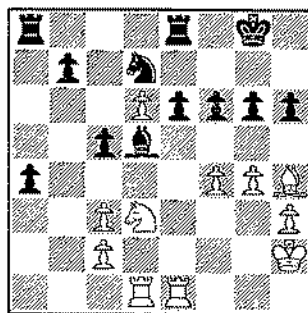
25 PxQ	PxPch	28 P-B6!	B-B1	31 RxKP	Resigns
26 KxP	R-R6	29 QPxP	BPxP		
27 Q-B6!	N-B4	30 KR-K1	B-K2		

With Fischer's lead now reduced to 6½-4½, and with such an overwhelming victory as this to inspire him, it looked as if Spassky might yet make a fight of it. The twelfth game, with Fischer playing the White pieces in a Queen's Gambit Declined, was a well played draw. Then in the thirteenth there came the most arduous battle of the entire match:

### Alekhine's Defense

White: Spassky Black: Fischer 1 P-K4, N-KB3 (Fischer had played Alekhine's Defense several times in 1970, including three times in the Palma Interzonal, where he had won twice with it and drawn once. That Spassky was apparently unprepared to meet it is, therefore, no less than astonishing.); 2 P-K5, N-Q4; 3 P-Q4, P-Q3; 4 N-KB3, P-KN3 (For 4 . . . B-N5, see the nineteenth game, p. 283.); 5 B-QB4 (Tame. More usual is 5 B-K2, B-N2; 6 P-QB4, N-N3; 7 PxP, BPxP; 8 N-B3, 0-0; 9 0-0, N-B3; 10 B-K3, B-N5; 11 P-QN3, P-Q4 as in Browne-Fischer, Zagreb, 1970. Also 5 N-N5, P-QB3!; 6 B-QB4, B-N2; 7 Q-K2 is sharper than the text.), N-N3 (The alternative 5 . . . P-QB3 is too passive: 6 0-0, B-N2; 7 PxP, QxP; 8 P-KR3±—Kavalek-Kupka, Czechoslovakia, 1968.); 6 B-N3, B-N2; 7 QN-Q2?! (7 0-0, 0-0; 8 P-QR4!, P-QR4; 9 P-KR3, N-B3; 10 Q-K2, P-Q4?; 11 N-B3, B-K3; 12 B-KB4±—Keres-Kupka, Kapfenberg, 1970), 0-0; 8 P-KR3(?), P-QR4!; 9 P-QR4? (P-B3), PxP; 10 PxP, N-R3!; 11 0-0 (11 N-K4, QxQch; 12 KxQ, B-B4; 13 N-N3, B-Q2±), N-B4; 12 Q-K2, Q-K1!; 13 N-K4, N/3xP; 14 BxN, NxN; 15 R-K1, N-N3; 16 B-Q2, P-R5; 17 B-N5 (17 B-N4, N-Q4!), P-R3; 18 B-R4, B-B4(? B-Q2!); 19 P-KN4, B-K3 (B-Q2!); 20 N-Q4!, B-B5; 21 Q-Q2, Q-Q2; 22 QR-Q1, KR-K1; 23 P-B4!, B-Q4; 24 N-QB5, Q-B1; 25 Q-B3 (P-K6!), P-K3!; 26 K-R2, N-Q2; 27 N-Q3? (N-N5!), P-QB4!; 28 N-N5, Q-B3; 29 N-Q6, QxN; 30 PxQ, BxQ; 31 PxN, P-B3; 32 P-N5!, RPxP; 33 PxP, P-B4; 34 B-N3, K-B2; 35 N-K5ch, NxN; 36 BxN, P-N4; 37 R-KB1, R-R1!; 38 B-B6!, P-R6; 39 R-B4, P-R7; 40 P-B4, BxP; 41 P-Q7, B-Q4 (The game was adjourned here.); 42 K-N3!, R-R6ch; 43 P-B3 (43 K-B2?, R/6xP!; 44 P-Q8/Q, RxQ; 45 BxR, P-K4!), R/1-R1!; 44 R-KR4, P-K4!;

FISCHER

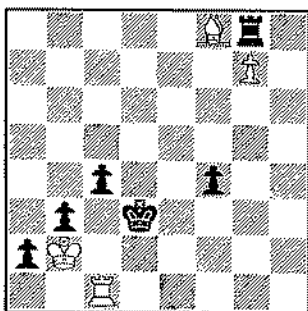


Position after 31... P-B3

SPASSKY

45 R-R7ch, K-K3; 46 R-K7ch, K-Q3; 47 RxP, RxPch; 48 K-B2, R-B7ch; 49 K-K1, KxP; 50 R/5xBch, K-B3; 51 R-Q6ch, K-N2; 52 R-Q7ch, K-R3; 53 R/7-Q2, RxR; 54 KxR, P-N5; 55 P-R4 (55 K-B2?, K-N4; 56 K-N2, P-QB5; 57 K-R1, P-B6++), K-N4; 56 P-R5, P-QB5!; 57 R-QR1, PxP; 58 P-N6, P-R5; 59 P-N7, P-R6; 60 B-K7, R-KN1; 61 B-B8 (61 B-B6 is also sufficient to draw), P-R7; 62 K-B2, K-B3; 63 R-Q1, P-N6ch; 64 K-B3? (K-N2 was more precise), P-KR8/Q! (64... P-B5; 65 R-Q6ch!, K-B2; 66 R-Q1!); 65 RxQ, K-Q4; 66 K-N2, P-B5; 67 R-Q1ch, K-K5; 68 R-QB1, K-Q6;

FISCHER



SPASSKY

69 R-Q1ch?? (69 R-B3ch, K-Q5; 70 R-B3, P-B6ch; 71 K-R1, P-B7; 72 RxBPch, K-B6; 73 R-B3ch, K-Q7; 74 B-R3! is an easy draw), K-K7!; 70 R-QB1, P-KB6; 71 B-B5, RxP; 72 RxP, R-Q2!; 73 R-K4ch, K-B8; 74 B-Q4, P-B7; Resigns.

Now, with the score 8-5 in Fischer's favor, Spassky's will to resist was all but gone, although after another postponement he came back to draw the next seven games. This is not to say that the games themselves were not hard fought, which they were, but only that virtually no one, including Spassky, any longer felt that the outcome of the match was in doubt.

There were of course comic episodes: on the day of the fifteenth game, for example, Chester Fox announced the sum for which he was going to sue Bobby, a modest \$1,250,000. It was perhaps only then that people began to realize the extent to which the match was going to revolutionize chess. As Gligorich put it in his book, published only a few days after the last move had been made:

Well, another cosmic age has dawned for chess grandmasters... with a few signatures Bobby could make one million two hundred thousand in only three weeks after the match. [Another cosmic age? When was the first?] But will he ever sign? One recalls a private episode after Fischer's match with Petrosian. Robert James Fischer was tempted with a six figure sum to advertise a hair lotion. After a little hesitation, he rejected the offer with an argument of annihilating effect: "I cannot do it. After all, I never use it!"

Next it was the turn of the Russians to supply the comic relief. Whether it was the idea of some anonymous genius in the Bureau of Physiaculture and Sport in Moscow, or of Spassky's second, Efim Geller, who actually signed the silly thing, or even of Spassky himself, will probably never be known, but on the day of the seventeenth game a statement was issued to the press that summoned up for many people recollections of the James Bond movie *From Russia With Love* and its (highly fanciful) view of a world championship chess match. The statement began with the usual protest against Fischer's "ungentlemanly" conduct, claiming that the challenger's erratic behavior was "deliberately aimed at

exercizing pressure on the opponent, unbalancing Mr. B. Spassky and making him lose his fighting spirit." The rest was strictly out of Cloud-Cookoo-Land:

We have received letters saying that some electronic devices and chemical substance which can be in the playing hall are being used to influence Mr. B. Spassky. The letters mention, in particular, Mr. R. Fischer's chair and the influence of the special lighting over the stage installed on the demand of the US side.

All this may seem fantastic, but some objective factors in this connection make us think of such seemingly fantastic suppositions.

Why, for instance, does Mr. R. Fischer strongly protest against film-shooting even though he suffers financial losses? One of the reasons might be that he is anxious to get rid of the constant objective control over the behavior and physical state of the participants. The same could be supposed if we take into consideration his repeated demands to conduct the games behind closed doors and to remove the spectators from the first seven rows.

It is surprising that the Americans can be found in the playing hall when the games are not taking place, even at night. Mr. F. Cramer's demand that Mr. R. Fischer should be given "his" particular chair, though both the chairs look identical and are made by the same American firm.

I would also like to note that having known Mr. B. Spassky for many years, it is the first time I observe such unusual slackening of concentration and display of impulsiveness in his playing which I cannot account for by Mr. R. Fischer's exclusive impressive playing . . .

Lothar Schmid, whose sense of humor had not been completely extinguished by the madness of the preceeding weeks, stated that he would treat the Soviet protest "with all seriousness, as I have the American protests." A twenty-four hour guard was posted round the hall.

Meanwhile, the chess went on, with every draw bringing Fischer closer to his long-cherished dream. The nineteenth game, played

on the same day that Chester Fox's lawyer served the papers in the famous lawsuit (which not subject to the Wage-Price Guidelines, turned out to be for \$1,750,000 and costs) was typical:

### *Alekhine's Defense*

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Fischer 1 P-K4, N-KB3; 2 P-K5, N-Q4; 3 P-Q4, P-Q3; 4 N-KB3, B-N5; 5 B-K2, P-K3; 6 O-O, B-K2; 7 P-KR3, B-R4; 8 P-B4, N-N3; 9 N-B3, O-O; 10 B-K3, P-Q4; 11 P-B5, BxN; 12 BxB, N-B5; 13 P-QN3, NxN; 14 PxN, P-QN3; 15 P-K4, P-QB3; 16 P-QN4, NPxP; 17 NPxP, Q-R4; 18 NxP, B-N4; 19 B-R5, BPxN; 20 BxPch, RxB; 21 RxR, Q-Q7; 22 QxQ, BxQ; 23 QR-KB1, N-B3; 24 PxP, PxP; 25 R-Q7, B-K6ch; 26 K-R1, BxP; 27 P-K6, B-K4; 28 RxQP, R-K1; 29 R-K1, RxP; 30 R-Q6, K-B2; 31 RxN, RxR; 32 RxB, K-B3; 33 R-Q5, K-K3; 34 R-R5, P-KR3; 35 K-R2, R-R3; 36 P-B6, RxBP; 37 R-QR5, P-R3; 38 K-N3, K-B3; 39 K-B3, R-B6ch; 40 K-B2, R-B7ch; Drawn.

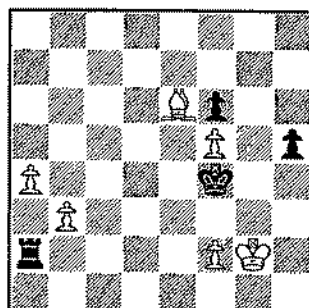
Finally on Thursday August 21, the long drama came to an end. After seven consecutive draws it had begun to look as if Bobby would back in to the title, but Boris was quite naturally unwilling to go without making one last desperate gesture (19 NxP?!). He still might have held the game, however, if it were not for a blunder on his very last move:

### *Sicilian Defense*

*White:* Spassky *Black:* Fischer 1 P-K4, P-QB4; 2 N-KB3, P-K3; 3 P-Q4, PxP; 4 NxP, P-QR3; 5 N-QB3, N-QB3; 6 B-K3, N-B3; 7 B-Q3, P-Q4; 8 PxP, PxP, 9 O-O, B-Q3; 10 NxN, PxN; 11 B-Q4, O-O; 12 Q-B3, B-K3; 13 KR-K1, P-B4; 14 BxN, QxB; 15 QxQ, PxQ=; 16 QR-Q1, KR-Q1; 17 B-K2, QR-N1; 18 P-QN3, P-B5; 19 NxP, BxN; 20 RxB, BxPch; 21 KxB, RxR; 22 BxP, R-Q7; 23 BxRP, RxQBP; 24 R-K2, RxR; 25 BxR, R-Q1; 26 P-R4, R-Q7; 27 B-B4, R-R7; 28 K-N3, K-B1; 29 K-B3, K-K2; 30 P-KN4?, P-B4; 31 PxP, P-B3; 32 B-N8, P-R3; 33 K-N3, K-Q3; 34 K-B3,

R-R8; 35 K-N2, K-K4; 36 B-K6, K-B5; 37 B-Q7, R-QN8; 38 B-K6, R-N7; 39 B-B4, R-R7; 40 B-K6, P-R4

FISCHER



SPASSKY

Here the game was adjourned. If White had sealed 41 K-R3! the issue would still have been in doubt, but after the actual sealed move, 41 B-Q7? Black has a quick win by 41... K-N5 followed by the advance of the rook-pawn. Spassky, therefore, resigned without resuming play, making the score 12½-8½ in Fischer's favor, and Fischer champion of the world.

What now? Fischer has said he will be champion for the next thirty years, and just now there is no one about to say him nay. Surely he is the best chess player the world has ever seen; he studies the openings with the pertinacity of a Tedescan philologist, and has learned to vary his repertoire so that it is enormously difficult to prepare anything against him. His skill in the endings is unrivaled. If, as some have claimed, his middlegame play shows some weaknesses, the best players around have failed to exploit them.

Will he then make good this boast, as he has made good so many others? Maybe. The world of chess moves very quickly nowadays, and new players are coming to the fore all the time, any one of whom may someday present a formidable challenge to Fischer. For this, too, he is in part responsible.

## General Index

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Alekhine, Alexander, 67-69, 80-98,<br>100-116, 118-20, 169, 181-82   | Deschappelles, A. Lebreton, 2, 3   |
| Anderssen, Adolf, 4-5, 9-14, 16, 18-<br>24, 28, 30   | Edmondson, Col. Edmund, 232,<br>245-46, 258, 265   |
| Averbach, Yuri, 156-57, 178  | Euwe, Dr. Max, 5, 25-26, 49, 84,<br>102-116, 118, 120-29, 132-35,<br>138, 156-57, 181, 190, 258-60,<br>262   |
| Benko, Pal, 180, 182, 186-88, 201-<br>202, 205-208, 210-12   | <i>Fédération Internationale Des Echecs</i><br>(FIDE), 57, 81, 95, 109-110,<br>116, 120, 136, 143-44, 178,<br>180, 200-201, 219, 256, 258-<br>259, 262 |
| Bernstein, Dr. Ossip, 68, 73   | Filip, Dr. Miroslav, 165, 168-69,<br>201, 205, 207-208, 212  |
| Bisguier, Arthur, 201, 206   | Fine, Dr. Reuben, 94, 98, 100, 110,<br>116, 120-21, 138  |
| Blackburne, John, 18, 27   | Fischer, Bobby, 18, 52, 55, 99, 177,<br>179-80, 182-83, 186-89, 200-<br>210, 212, 219-20, 232-35, 245-<br>284  |
| Bogolubov, Efim, 79, 81-83, 96-97,<br>100-102  | Flohr, Salo, 98-9, 102, 110, 116-<br>117, 121, 137, 144  |
| Boleslavsky, Isaac, 118-19, 137-40,<br>143-44, 157-58  | Geller, Efim, 156-58, 165-68, 201-<br>202, 205-207, 210-12, 220-24,<br>233, 235-36, 246-47, 259, 281   |
| Bondarevsky, Igor, 118-19, 121,<br>137-38, 155   | Gipslis, Avar, 233-34  |
| Botvinnik, Dr. Mikhail, 99-100,<br>109-110, 115-16, 118-136, 143-<br>156, 160-65, 169-77, 189-200,<br>212-18, 220, 237 | Gligorich, Svetozar, 156, 180-83,<br>186-87, 205, 235-37, 281  |
| Bronstein, David, 137-55, 157-59,<br>165, 167-68, 178, 180-81, 201,<br>220, 237  |  |
| Buck, Charles, 1, 14-15  |  |
| Byrne, Donald, 179   |  |
| Byrne, Robert, 179, 234  |  |
| Capablanca, José, 26, 49, 55, 68-78,<br>80-102, 109-110, 116-18, 179,<br>257   |  |

Golombek, Sir Harry, 126, 155  
Gunsberg, Isidor, 27, 36, 38

Horowitz, Al, 98, 120  
Hubner, Robert, 246-47

Ivkov, Boris, 220, 223

Janowsky, David, 63-64, 67, 99

Keres, Paul, 100, 116, 118-22, 124-127, 129, 132-35, 138-43, 155-159, 165, 167-69, 178, 182, 186-190, 207-212, 220-21, 237

Korchnoi, Viktor, 201-207, 210-12, 232, 234-35, 237-40, 246-47, 250

Kotov, Alexander, 118, 121, 137-140, 156-58, 205

Krogus, Nikolai, 259-267

Larsen, Bent, 55, 180, 220, 223-25, 235, 237-240, 246-47, 250-52

Lasker, Emanuel, 26-27, 39-78, 81-83, 97, 109-110, 117, 190, 257  
Liliental, Andreas, 118-19, 121, 137, 155

Lombardy, William, 179, 201, 261, 268

London Rules, 80, 81, 83, 85, 101

Manhattan Chess Club, 117, 179

Maroczy, Geza, 56, 81

Marshall, Frank, 38, 49, 55, 56, 68, 69, 83, 98

Matches, Candidates'

Boleslavsky-Bronstein (1950), 143-44

Fischer-Larsen (1971), 55, 250, 251

Fischer-Petrosian (1971), 252-56, 263, 281

Fischer-Taimanov (1971), 55, 246-49

Geller-Smyslov (1965), 221-23

Korchnoi-Geller (1971), 246-47  
Korchnoi-Reshevsky (1968), 235, 237

Korchnoi-Tal (1968), 238-39  
Larsen-Ivkov (1965), 223

Larsen-Uhlmann (1971), 246-47  
Larsen-Portisch (1968), 235, 237-238

Petrosian-Hubner (1971), 246-47  
Petrosian-Korchnoi (1971), 250

Spassky-Geller (1968), 235-36  
Spassky-Geller (1965), 224

Spassky-Keres (1965), 220-221  
Spassky-Korchnoi (1968), 239-245

Spassky-Larsen (1968), 238-39  
Spassky-Tal (1965), 225-27

Tal-Gligorich (1968), 235-37  
Tal-Larsen (1965), 224-25

Tal-Portisch (1965), 223-24

Matches, Misc.

Morphy-Anderssen (1858), 10-14  
Steinitz-Anderssen (1866), 18-24

Matches, Play-off

Benko-Stein-Gligorich (1962), 205

Keres-Geller (1963), 212, 220  
Portisch-Reshevsky (1964), 220

Reshevsky-Stein-Hort (1967), 235

Matches, World Championship

Alekhine-Bogolubov (1934), 100-102

Alekhine-Bogolubov (1929), 96-97

Alekhine-Euwe (1935), 95, 102-109, 116

Alekhine-Euwe (1937), 110-16  
Botvinnik-Bronstein (1951), 143-154

Botvinnik-Petrosian (1963), 212-218

Botvinnik-Smyslov (1954), 160-165

Botvinnik-Smyslov (1957), 165, 169-174

Botvinnik-Tal (1960), 190-96  
Capablanca-Alekhine (1927), 85-94

Lasker-Capablanca (1921), 71-72, 74-78, 257

Lasker-Janowsky (1907), 63-64  
Lasker-Janowsky (1910), 63, 67

Lasker-Marshall (1907), 55-56  
Lasker-Schlechter (1910), 63-67

Lasker-Steinitz (1896), 53, 190  
Lasker-Tarrash (1908), 51, 56-62, 64

Petrosian-Spassky (1966), 227-231

Petrosian-Spassky (1969), 240-245, 257

Smyslov-Botvinnik (1958), 174-176

Spassky-Fischer (1972), 256-284  
Steinitz-Gunsberg (1890-1), 36

Steinitz-Lasker (1894), 39-47, 190  
Steinitz-Tchigorin (1889), 35-36

Steinitz-Tchigorin (1892), 36-38  
Steinitz-Zuckertort (1886), 1, 24, 28-35

Tal-Botvinnik (1961), 196-200  
Morphy, Paul, 3, 5-17, 24, 27, 179

Najdorf, Miguel, 120-21, 137, 157

Nimzovich, Aron, 79, 82-84

Olafsson, Frederick, 180, 182, 186-188, 201

Panno, Oscar, 165, 246

Petrosian, Tigran, 156-57, 160, 165, 167, 178, 180, 182, 186-87, 201-202, 205-207, 210-19, 227-231, 240-47, 250, 252-56, 259, 263, 281

Pillsbury, Harry, 49, 52

Pilnik, Herman, 165, 167

Portisch, Lajos, 220, 223-24, 235, 237-38

Ragozin, Vyacheslav, 121, 136  
Reshevsky, Samuel, 98-100, 110, 120-26, 129-35, 138, 156-160, 165, 179-180, 220, 232, 234, 237

Reti, Richard, 78-79, 82-83

Rogard, Folke, 201, 206

Rubinstein, Akiba, 63, 68-70, 81-82, 99

Schlechter, Carl, 63-67, 71

Schmid, Lothar, 264-66, 268-69, 282

Smyslov, Vassily, 118-126, 129, 132-35, 138-140, 154-178, 181-87, 201, 219, 221-23

Spassky, Boris, 165, 167-68, 177-178, 200-201, 220-21, 224-231, 235-36, 239-245, 256-284

Spielmann, Rudolf, 50, 82-84

Stahlberg, Gideon, 137, 156

Staunton, Howard, 3-5, 7-10

Stein, Leonid, 201-202, 205, 220, 235

Steinitz, William, 1, 16-47, 49-50, 52-54, 58, 78-79, 190

Szabo, Laszlo, 137, 156, 165

Taimanov, Mark, 55, 156-57, 246-249

Tal, Mikhail, 52, 177-78, 180-200, 206-208, 212-13, 220, 223-27, 236-39

Tarrasch, Siegbert, 39, 49, 51-52, 55-64, 69, 78-80

Tchigorin, Mikhail, 27, 35-38, 52, 79

Tournaments, Candidates'

Amsterdam (1956), 154, 165-69

Bled-Zagreb-Belgrade (1959), 182-89, 206

Budapest (1950), 137-143, 155

- Curaçao (1962), 196, 205-212, 219  
 Zurich (1953), 154-160, 165  
 Tournaments, Interzonal  
 Amsterdam (1964), 219  
 Goteburg (1955), 165  
 Palma de Mallorca (1970), 245-246  
 Portoroz (1958), 154, 178, 180-182  
 Saltsjobaden (1948), 137  
 Sousse (1967), 231-35, 246  
 Stockholm (1952), 156-57, 205  
 Stockholm (1962), 200-207  
 Tournaments, Misc.  
 AVRO (1938), 98, 100, 116-17  
 Hastings (1895), 26-27, 35, 52, 57  
 Leningrad-Moscow (1941), 118-119, 125, 155  
 New York (1927), 83-84  
 Nottingham (1936), 50, 109-110, 115, 117  
 Tournament, World Championship (1948), 120-136, 155  
 Tournaments, Zonal, 136-37, 180, 200-201  
 Uhlmann, Wolfgang, 200-202, 246-247, 258  
 United States Chess Federation, 119, 206, 232, 234, 245, 267  
 Vidmar, Milan, 83-4  
 Zukertort, Johannes, 1, 24, 27-35, 47, 79

## Index to Players

A number in italics indicates that the first-named player had White.  
 P indicates that the score of the game is not given in full.

ALEKHINE vs. Bogolubov, 97, 101P; vs. Capablanca, 85P, 86, 87, 89, 90, 93; vs. Euwe, 102, 105, 106, 110, 111, 112, 114P, 115  
 ANDERSSSEN vs. Morphy, 10P, 11, 12, 13; vs. Steinitz, 20, 23  
 AVERBACH vs. Kotov, 157

BENKO vs. Petrosian, 210  
 BOGOLUBOV vs. Alekhine, 97, 101P  
 BOTVINNIK vs. Bronstein, 144, 145, 146, 147, 149, 150, 153P; vs. Euwe, 127; vs. Keres, 125; vs. Petrosian, 213, 214, 216, 217, 218; vs. Reshevsky, 123P, 124P, 129; vs. Smyslov, 160, 160, 163, 164, 170, 172P, 173P, 174, 175; vs. Tal, 191, 191, 194, 195, 197, 198, 198  
 BRONSTEIN vs. Botvinnik, 144, 145, 146, 147, 149, 150, 153P; vs. Cardoso, 180P; vs. Keres,

141, 167; vs. Kotov, 138; vs. Smyslov, 139, 168

CAPABLANCA vs. Lasker, 74, 76P, 77, 78P; vs. Alekhine, 85P, 86, 87, 89, 90, 93  
 CARDOSO vs. Bronstein, 180P

EUWE vs. Alekhine, 102, 105, 106, 110, 111, 112, 114P, 115; vs. Botvinnik, 127; vs. Geller, 156; vs. Keres, 121P, 126; vs. Smyslov, 123P

FILIP vs. Fischer, 207P; vs. Keres, 169P  
 FISCHER vs. Filip, 207P; vs. Gligorich, 183; vs. Keres, 208; vs. Korchnoi, 202, 210P; vs. Larsen, 251, 252P; vs. Petrosian, 187P, 252, 253, 254; vs. Rubinetti, 246; vs. Spassky, 264P, 268, 269, 271, 275, 279, 283, 283; vs. Taimanov, 247P, 248, 249P; vs. Tal, 182, 188

GELLER vs. Euwe, 156; vs. Korchnoi, 206; vs. Smyslov, 167, 222; vs. Spassky, 224, 236



GLIGORICH vs. Fischer, 183; vs. Tal, 237

KERES vs. Botvinnik, 125; vs. Bronstein, 141, 167; vs. Euwe, 121P, vs. Filip, 169P; vs. Fischer, 208; vs. Korchnoi, 211; vs. Kotov, 138; vs. Reshevsky, 133; vs. Smyslov, 122, 133, 158; vs. Spassky, 220; vs. Tal, 187

KORCHNOI vs. Fischer, 202, 210P; vs. Geller, 206; vs. Keres, 211; vs. Petrosian, 211, 250; vs. Spassky, 240; vs. Tal, 238

KOTOV vs. Averbach, 157; vs. Bronstein, 138; vs. Keres, 138

LARSEN vs. Fischer, 251, 252P; vs. Portisch, 237; vs. Spassky, 239, vs. Tal, 225

LASKER vs. Capablanca, 74, 76P, 77, 78P; vs. Schlechter, 64, 66; vs. Steinitz, 26P, 39, 41P, 42, 44, 46P, 53; vs. Tarrasch, 51P, 58, 59, 62P, 62

MORPHY vs. Anderssen, 10P, 11, 12, 13

PETROSIAN vs. Benko, 210; vs. Botvinnik, 213, 214, 216, 217, 218; vs. Fischer, 187P, 252, 253, 254; vs. Spassky, 228, 228, 231, 241P, 241, 242, 243, 245

PORTISCH vs. Larsen, 237; vs. Tal, 224

RESHEVSKY vs. Botvinnik, 123P, 124P, 129; vs. Keres, 133

RUBINETTI vs. Fischer, 246

SCHLECHTER vs. Lasker, 64, 66

SMYSLOV vs. Botvinnik, 160, 160, 163, 164, 170, 170, 172P, 173P, 174, 175; vs. Bronstein, 139, 168; vs. Euwe, 123P; vs. Geller, 167, 222; vs. Keres, 122, 133, 158; vs. Tal, 183

SPASSKY vs. Fischer, 264P, 268, 269, 271, 275, 279, 283; vs. Geller, 224, 235; vs. Keres, 220; vs. Korchnoi, 240; vs. Larsen, 239; vs. Petrosian, 228, 228, 231, 231P, 241P, 242, 243, 245

STEINITZ vs. Anderssen, 20, 23; vs. Lasker, 26P, 39, 41P, 42, 46P, 53; vs. Tchigorin, 36, 37; vs. Zukertort, 29, 29P, 30, 30, 33P, 35

TAIMANOV vs. Fischer, 247P, 248, 249P

TAL vs. Botvinnik, 191, 191, 194, 195P, 197, 198; vs. Fischer, 182, 188; vs. Gligorich, 236; vs. Keres, 187; vs. Korchnoi, 238; vs. Larsen, 225; vs. Portisch, 224; vs. Smyslov, 183; vs. Spassky, 226, 226

TARRASCH vs. Lasker, 51P, 58, 59, 62P, 62

TCHIGORIN vs. Steinitz, 36, 37

ZUKERTORT vs. Steinitz, 29, 29P, 30, 30, 33P, 35

## Index to Openings

1 P-K4, P-K4

EVANS GAMBIT, 10, 136

KING'S GAMBIT, 20

RU Y LOPEZ, 11, 23, 39, 42, 44, 58, 59, 64, 126, 133, 141, 167, 182, 202, 208, 224, 226, 245

VIENNA GAME, 34, 237

1 P-K4, other than . . . P-K4

ALEKHINE'S DEFENSE, 279, 283

CARO-KANN DEFENSE, 183, 194, 198, 224

CENTER-COUNTER DEFENSE, 12

FRENCH DEFENSE, 62, 85, 102, 160, 191, 251

SICILIAN DEFENSE, 13, 183, 188, 211, 225, 226, 239, 242, 246, 252, 254, 275, 283

1 P-Q4, P-Q4

CATALAN SYSTEM, 238

QUEEN'S GAMBIT ACCEPTED, 30, 218

QUEEN'S GAMBIT DECLINED, 29, 30, 53, 74, 77, 87, 89, 90, 127, 133, 138, 139, 150, 187, 217, 241, 243, 271

QUEEN'S PAWN OPENING, 227

SLAV DEFENSE, 66, 110, 111, 112

1 P-Q4, other than . . . P-Q4

BOGOLUBOV-INDIAN DEFENSE, 236

DUTCH DEFENSE, 37, 105, 106, 146, 195

GRUNFELD DEFENSE, 122, 170, 175, 210, 214, 222, 253

KING'S INDIAN DEFENSE, 163, 170, 174, 191, 198, 206, 220, 228, 231, 239, 248

MODERN BENONI DEFENSE, 268

NIMZO-INDIAN DEFENSE, 115, 125, 129, 144, 149, 156, 160, 167, 197, 213, 269

QUEEN'S INDIAN DEFENSE, 86, 97, 147

Other openings

ENGLISH OPENING, 158, 168, 211, 216

KING'S INDIAN REVERSED, 164, 250

IRREGULAR, 231